



26-7

Presented by
R. Hall

* * * * *
* THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY,
Princeton, N. J.
* * * * *

Case, Division SCC
Shelf, Section 3284
Book, No. C. 1

F.

201
10

THE
REASON OF FAITH;

OR, AN

ANSWER UNTO THAT ENQUIRY,

WHEREFORE WE BELIEVE THE SCRIPTURE TO BE THE WORD OF GOD?

WITH

The Causes and Nature of that Faith wherewith we do so.

WHEREIN

The Grounds whereon the Holy Scripture is Believed to be the Word of God with Faith Divine and Supernatural, are Declared and Vindicated.

TOGETHER WITH THE

CAUSES, WAYS AND MEANS,

OF

UNDERSTANDING THE MIND OF GOD

AS REVEALED IN HIS WORD, WITH ASSURANCE THEREIN:

AND,

A DECLARATION

OF THE

PERSPICUITY OF THE SCRIPTURES,

WITH THE EXTERNAL MEANS OF THE INTERPRETATION
OF THEM.

BY JOHN OWEN, D. D.

Our belief of the Scriptures to be the Word of God, or a Divine Revelation, and our understand'g of the mind and will of God as revealed in them, are the two springs of all our interest in Christian religion. From them are all those streams of light and truth derived, whereby our souls are watered, refreshed, and made fruitful unto God.—Page 167.

GLASGOW:

PRINTED BY W. FALCONER,

FOR STEPHEN YOUNG, & SOLD BY J. FOWLER, PAISLEY;

M. OGLE, GLASGOW; OGLE & AIKMAN, EDINBURGH; & R. OGLE, LONDON.

Subscribers for this Work are informed, that, occasioned by a deficiency in the numbers of some pages, at the latter end of the copy from which the calculation, as stated in the proposal, was made, that statement was nearly 100 pages deficient: in order, therefore, that the book might not be too thick, it was found requisite to print it in an *octavo*, instead of a *duodecimo* volume; on account of which, the price is necessarily raised one Sixpence; and although the book is lower still, than if it had been published agreeably to the original conditions; yet, if any think it too high, they, nevertheless, have the Editor's thanks for their prompt encouragement of the Work, and are free of any obligation from their subscriptions.

Booksellers and others are also informed, that if the book does not seasonably reimburse itself, the price of what remains on hand will be raised; and with regret it may be observed, that from the appearance of the present rising price of paper, it is not to be expected, that one of similar size, paper and workmanship, can for the future be offered on such moderate terms.

THE
REASON OF FAITH;

OR, AN

ANSWER UNTO THAT ENQUIRY,

*WHEREFORE WE BELIEVE THE SCRIPTURE
TO BE THE WORD OF GOD?*

WITH

THE CAUSES AND NATURE OF THAT FAITH WHERE-
WITH WE DO SO.

WHEREIN

The Grounds whereon the Holy Scripture is believed to be the Word of God with Faith Divine and Supernatural, are Declared and Vindicated.

—
BY JOHN OWEN, D. D.

If they hear not Moses, and the Prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead.—Luke xvi. 51.

GLASGOW:

PRINTED BY W. FALCONER,
FOR STEPHEN YOUNG, PAISLEY.

1801.

P R E . F A C E .

HAVING added a brief account of the design, order, and method of the ensuing discourse in an appendix at the close of it ; I shall not here detain the reader with the proposal of them. Yet some few things remain, which I judge it necessary to mind him of. Be he who he will, I am sure we shall not differ about the weight of the argument in hand ; for whether it be the truth we contend for, or otherwise, yet it will not be denied, but that the determination of it, and the settling of the minds of men about it, are of the highest concernment unto them. But whereas so much hath been written of late by others on this subject, any further debate of it may seem either needless or unseasonable. Something therefore may be spoken to evidence that the reader is not imposed on by that, which may absolutely fall under either of those characters. Had the end in and by these discourses been effectually accomplished, it had been altogether useless to renew an endeavour unto the same purpose. But whereas an opposition unto the Scripture, and the grounds whereon we believe it to be a divine revelation, is still openly continued amongst us ; a continuation of the defence of the one and the other cannot reasonably be judged either needless or unseasonable. Besides, most of the discourses published of late on this subject have had their peculiar designs, wherein that here tendered is not expressly engaged. For some of them do principally aim to prove, that we have sufficient grounds

to believe the Scripture, without any recourse unto, or reliance upon the authoritative proposal of the church of Rome; which they have sufficiently evinced beyond any possibility of rational contradiction from their adversaries. Others have pleaded and vindicated those rational considerations, whereby our assent unto the divine original of it, is fortified and confirmed against the exceptions and objections of such whose love of sin, and resolutions to live therein, tempts them to seek for shelter in an atheistical contempt of the authority of God, evidencing itself therein. But as neither of these are utterly neglected in the ensuing discourse, so the peculiar design of it is of another nature. For the enquiries managed therein, namely, what is the obligation upon us to believe the Scripture to be the word of God? what are the causes and what is the nature of that faith whereby we do so? what it rests on, and is resolved into, so as to become a divine and acceptable duty? do respect the consciences of men immediately, and the way whereby they may come to rest and assurance in believing. Whereas therefore it is evident, that many are often shaken in their minds, with those atheistical objections against the divine original and authority of the Scripture, which they frequently meet withal; that many know not how to extricate themselves from the ensnaring questions that they are often attacked withal about them; not for want of a due assent unto them, but of a right understanding what is the true and formal reason of that assent; what is the firm basis and foundation that it rests upon; what answer they may directly and peremptorily give unto that enquiry, Wherefore do you believe the Scripture to be the word of God? I have endeavoured to give them those directions herein, that upon a due examination they will find compliant with the Scripture itself, right reason, and their own experience. I am not therefore altogether without hopes that this small discourse may have its use, and be given out in its proper season. Moreover, I think it necessary to acquaint the reader, that as I have allowed all the argu-

ments pleaded by others to prove the divine authority of the Scripture, their proper place, and force; so where I differ in the explication of any thing belonging unto this subject from the conceptions of other men, I have candidly examined such opinions, and the arguments wherewith they are confirmed, without straining the words, caviling at the expressions, or reflections on the persons of any of the authors of them. And whereas I have myself been otherwise dealt withal by many, and know not how soon I may be so again, I do hereby free the persons of such humours and inclinations from all fear of any reply from me, or the least notice of what they shall be pleased to write or say. Such kind of writings are of the same consideration with me, as those multiplied false reports which some have raised concerning me, the most of them so ridiculous and foolish, so alien from my principles, practice, and course of life, as I cannot but wonder how any persons pretending to gravity and sobriety, are not sensible how their credulity and inclinations are abused in the hearing and repetition of them. The occasion of this discourse is that which in the last place I shall acquaint the reader withal. About three years since I published a book about the dispensation and operations of the Spirit of God. That book was one part only of what I designed on that subject. The consideration of the work of the Holy Spirit, as the spirit of illumination, of supplication, of consolation, and as the immediate author of all spiritual offices, and gifts extraordinary and ordinary, is designed unto the second part of it. Hereof this ensuing discourse is concerning one part of his work, as a spirit of illumination, which upon the earnest requests of some acquainted with the nature and substance of it, I have suffered to come out by itself, that it might be of the more common use, and more easily obtained.

MAR, 11, 1677.

CHRISTIANS,

TO fill up this page, let the Editor here present you with a few RULES whereby to try the truth of the BIBLE's claim to Divinity, and which, so far as external evidence is concerned, have hitherto been found completely decisive in favour thereof.

I. THAT the actions performed by Moses and the Prophets, by JESUS CHRIST and his Apostles, and the doctrines by them delivered, be of such a nature, as the eyes that saw them, and the ears that heard them, be judges of them.

II. THAT those actions done, and doctrines delivered, be so public, that every description of men, may be witnesses.

III. THAT some significant monuments be instituted, and commemorative actions done, declarative of the rectitude of those actions, and commemorative of the truth and goodness of the doctrines delivered.

IV. THAT those instituted monuments, and commemorative actions, do commence from the time those doctrines were delivered, and actions performed by Moses and the Prophets, and by JESUS CHRIST and his Apostles.

V. THAT those same instituted monuments, and commemorative actions, have been regularly and without variation observed, from the time those actions were done, and doctrines delivered, unto the present time.

THERE is nothing ambiguous nor doubtful in these RULES. By the actions performed by Moses and the Prophets, by JESUS CHRIST and his Apostles; may be understood those singular actions they publicly performed in the presence of many thousands. More than six hundred thousand were witnesses to Moses' dividing the Red Sea; and Joshua and the Priests' dividing Jordan. They saw what they did, and heard what they said; and all Jerusalem, and inhabitants of Judea, saw the miracles CHRIST wrought, and heard his public sermons, and acknowledged that notable miracles were wrought by JESUS CHRIST and his Apostles.

By the significant monuments instituted, and commemorative actions done, declarative of the truth and goodness of the doctrines delivered, mentioned in the three last RULES; may be understood the Sacraments of circumcision and the passover, under the Mosaic economy; and baptism and the LORD's Supper, under the Christian dispensation.

THE two first of these RULES, above-mentioned, make it impossible, that the records of the Old or New Testaments, could be impositions on mankind, their eyes, and ears, being witnesses to the contrary. And the three last equally secure us against all deceit, or imposture: for those institutions, and actions, detect all falsehood, or impostures of men. Danger of error or mistake, could not take place at first, and while those significant monuments, and commemorative actions, have been regularly kept up, and most scrupulously adhered to, from generation to generation, to this day, we cannot be mistaken. It remains, therefore, indisputably true, that these doctrines possess all the truth and goodness they ever did; and we can be no more deceived on this head, than those who first heard them, or saw his great wonders performed in their presence.

WHAT then would common sense have more, or should reason further demand, to give satisfaction to the human heart, about the truth and goodness of the Holy Scriptures? And how is it possible to get clear of the moral certainty these RULES convey to the mind of man.*

* See Leslie's *Easy method with the Deists*, and Stowley's *Appeal to Light*.

THE
REASON OF FAITH;

OR

THE GROUNDS WHEREON THE SCRIPTURE IS BELIEVED
TO BE THE WORD OF GOD WITH FAITH DIVINE AND
SUPERNATURAL.

CHAP. I.

The Subject stated.—Preliminary Remarks.

THE principal design of that discourse, whereof the ensuing Treatise is a part, is to declare the work of the Holy Ghost in the illumination of the minds of men. For this work is particularly and eminently ascribed unto him; or the efficacy of the grace of God by him dispensed, Eph. i. 17, 18. Heb. vi. 4. Luke ii. 32. Acts xiii. 47. chap. xxiv. 45. chap. xxvi. 18. 2 Cor. iv. 4. 1 Pet. ii. 9. The objective cause and outward means of it, are the subjects at present designed unto consideration. And it will issue in these two enquiries.

1. On what Grounds, or for what Reason, we do believe the Scripture to be the Word of God with Faith Divine and Supernatural, as it is required of us in a way of duty.
2. How or by what means we may come to understand aright the Mind of God in the Scripture, or the Revelations that are made unto us of his Mind and Will therein.

For by illumination in general, as it denotes an effect wrought in the minds of men, I understand that supernatural knowledge that any man hath, or may have of the mind and will of God, as revealed unto him by supernatural means, for the law of his faith, life, and obedience. And this so far as it is comprised in the first of these enquiries, is that, whose declaration we at present design, reserving the latter unto a distinct discourse by itself also. Unto the former some things may be premised.

First, Supernatural Revelation is the only objective cause and means of Supernatural Illumination. These things are commensurate. There is a natural knowledge of supernatural things, and that both theoretical, and practical, Rom. i. 19. chap. ii. 14, 15. And there may be a supernatural knowledge of natural things, 1 Kings iv. 31, 32, 33, 34. Exod. xxxi. 3, 4, 5, 6. But unto this supernatural illumination, it is required, both that its object be things only supernaturally revealed, or as supernaturally revealed, 1 Cor. ii. 9, 10. And that it be wrought in us by a supernatural efficiency, or the immediate efficacy of the Spirit of God, Ephes. i. 17, 18, 19. 2 Cor. iv. 6. This David prays for, Psal. cxix. 18. “**נָלַצְנִי**” Reveal, or uncover mine eyes, bring light and spiritual understanding into my mind, that I may behold “**(ανακεχαλλυμένω πρόσωπον,** with open face, or as in the Syriack **בְּאָפָא נָלַצְנִי**, with a revealed, or uncovered face, the veil being taken away, 2 Cor. iii. 18.) “wondrous things out of thy law.” The light he prayed for within, did merely respect the doctrine of the law without. This the apostle fully declares; Heb. i. 1, 2. The various supernatural revelations that God hath made of himself, his mind and will from first to last, are the sole and adequate object of supernatural illumination.

Secondly, This Divine external Revelation, was originally by various ways, (which we have elsewhere declared) given unto sundry persons immediately, partly for their own instruction and guidance in the knowledge of God

and his will, and partly by their ministry to be communicated unto the church. So was it granted unto Enoch the seventh from Adam, who thereon prophesied to the warning and instruction of others : Jude xiv. 15. And to Noah, who became thereby a “preacher of righteousness,” 2 Pet. ii. 5. And to Abraham, who thereon commanded his children and household to keep the way of the Lord, Gen. xviii. 19. And other instances of the like kind may be given : Gen. iv. 26. chap. v. 28. And this course did God continue a long time, even from the first promise to the giving of the law, before any revelations were committed to writing, for the space of 2460 years. For so long a season did God enlighten the minds of men by supernatural external immediate occasional revelations. Sundry things may be observed of this divine dispensation, As,

1. That it did sufficiently evidence itself to be from God, unto the minds of those unto whom it was granted, and theirs also unto whom these revelations were by them communicated. For during this season Satan used his utmost endeavours to possess the minds of men with his delusions under the pretence of divine supernatural inspirations. For hereunto belongs the original of all his oracles, and enthusiasms among the nations of the world. There was therefore a divine power and efficacy attending all divine revelations ascertaining and infallibly assuring the minds of men of their being from God. For if it had not been so, men had never been able to secure themselves, that they were not imposed on by the crafty deceits of Satan, especially in such revelations as seemed to contain things contrary to their reason, as in the command given to Abraham for the sacrificing his son, Gen. xxii. 2. Wherefore these immediate revelations had not been a sufficient means to secure the faith and obedience of the church, if they had not carried along with them their own evidence that they were from God. Of what nature that evidence was, we shall afterwards enquire, For the

present I shall only say, that it was an evidence unto faith and not to sense; as is that also which we have now by the scripture. It is not like that which the sun gives of itself by its light, which there needs no exercise of reason to assure us of; for sense is irresistibly affected with it. But it is like the evidence which the heavens and the earth give of their being made and created of God, and thereby of his being and power. This they do undeniably and infallibly. Psal. xix. 1, 2. Rom. i. 19, 20, 21. Yet is it required hereunto, that men do use and exercise the best of their rational abilities in the consideration and contemplation of them. Where this is neglected, notwithstanding their open and visible evidence unto the contrary, men degenerate into Atheism. God so gave out these revelations of himself, as to require the exercise of the faith, conscience, obedience, and reason of them unto whom they were made, and therein they gave full assurance of their proceeding from him. So he tells us that his word differeth from all other pretended revelations, as the wheat doth from the chaff, Jer. xxiii. 28. But yet it is our duty to try and sift the wheat from the chaff, or we may not evidently discern the one from the other.

2. The things so revealed were sufficient to guide and direct all persons in the knowledge of their duty to God, in all that was required of them in a way of faith or obedience. God from the beginning gave out the knowledge of his will πολυπεπτός, by sundry parts and degrees; yet so that every age and season had light enough to guide them in the whole obedience required of them, and unto their edification therein. They had knowledge enough to enable them to offer sacrifices in faith, as did Abel; to walk with God, as did Enoch, and to teach their families the fear of the Lord, as did Abraham. The world perished not for want of sufficient revelation of the mind of God at any time. Indeed when we go to consider those divine instructions which are upon record, that God

granted unto them, we are scarce able to discern how they were sufficiently enlightened in all that was necessary for them to believe and do. But they were unto them "as a light shining in a dark place." Set up but a candle in a dark room, and it will sufficiently enlighten it, for men to attend their necessary occasions therein. But when the sun is risen and shineth in at all the windows, the light of the candle grows so dim and useless, that it seems strange that any could have advantage thereby. The Sun of Righteousness is now risen upon us, and immortality is brought to light by the gospel. If we look now on the revelations granted unto them of old, we may yet see there was light in them, which yields us little more advantage than the light of a candle in the sun. But unto them who lived before this Sun arose, they were a sufficient guide unto all duties of faith and obedience. For,

3. There was during this season a sufficient ministry, for the declaration of the revelations, which God made of himself and his will. There was the natural ministry of parents, who were obliged to instruct their children and families in the knowledge of the truth which they had received. And whereas this began in Adam, who first received the promise, and therewithal whatsoever was necessary unto faith and obedience; the knowledge of it could not be lost without the wilful neglect of parents in teaching, or of children and families in learning. And they had the extraordinary ministry of such as God entrusted new revelations withal, for the confirmation and enlargement of those before received, who were all of them preachers of righteousness unto the rest of mankind. And it may be manifested, that from the giving of the first promise, when divine external revelations began to be the rule of faith and life unto the church, to the writing of the law; there was always alive one or other, who receiving divine revelations immediately, were a kind of infallible guides unto others. If it was other-

wise at any time, it was after the death of the patriarchs, before the call of Moses, during which time all things went into darkness and confusion. For oral tradition alone would not preserve the truth of former revelations. But by whom these instructions were received, they had a sufficient outward means for their illumination, before any divine revelations were recorded by writing. Yet,

4. This way of instruction, as it was in itself imperfect, and liable to many disadvantages, so through the weakness, negligence, and wickedness of men, it proved insufficient to retain the knowledge of God in the world. For under this dispensation the generality of mankind fell into their great apostacy from God, and betook themselves unto the conduct and service of the devil; of the ways, means, and degrees whereof I have discoursed * elsewhere. Hereon God also regarded them not, but "suffered all nations to walk in their own ways," Acts xiv. 16. giving them up to their own hearts' lusts to "walk in their own counsels," as it is expressed, Psal. lxxxi. 12. And although this fell not out without the horrible wickedness and ingratitude of the world; yet there being then no certain standard of divine truth, whereunto they might repair, they brake off the easier from God through the imperfection of this dispensation. If it shall be said, that since the revelation of the will of God hath been committed into writing, men have apostatized from the knowledge of God, as is evident in many nations of the world, which sometimes professed the gospel, but are now overrun with heathenism, Mahometanism, and idolatry: I say, this hath not come to pass through any defect in the way and means of illumination, or the communication of the truth unto them; but God hath given them up to be destroyed for their wickedness and ingratitude, and unless "we repent, we shall all likewise perish," Rom. i. 18. 2 Thess. ii. 11, 12. Otherwise where the standard of the word is once fixed, there is a constant means of preserving divine revelations. Wherefore,

* De Natura Theologice, lib. 3.

Thirdly, God hath gathered up into the scripture all divine revelations given out by himself from the beginning of the world, and all that ever shall be so to the end thereof, which are of general use unto the church, that it may be thoroughly instructed in the whole mind and will of God, and directed in all that worship of him, and obedience unto him, which is necessary to give us acceptance with him here, and to bring us unto the eternal enjoyment of him hereafter. For (1.) When God first committed the law to writing, with all those things which accompanied it, he obliged the church unto the use of it alone, without additions of any kind. Now this he would not have done, had he not expressed therein, that is the books of Moses, all that was any way needful unto the faith and obedience of the church. For he did not only command them to attend with all diligence unto his word, as it was then written for their instruction and direction in faith and obedience, annexing all sorts of promises unto their so doing, Deut vi. 6, 7. but also expressly forbids them, as was said, to add any thing thereunto, or to conjoin any thing therewith, Deut. iv. 2. chap xii. 32. which he would not have done, had he omitted other divine revelations, before given, that were any way necessary unto the use of the church. As he added many new ones, so he gathered in all the old from the unfaithful repository of tradition, and fixed them in a writing given by divine inspiration. (2.) For all other divine revelations, which were given out to the church, for its use in general, under the Old Testament, they are all comprised in the following books thereof; nor was this, that I know of, ever questioned by any person pretending to sobriety; though some, who would be glad of any pretence against the integrity and perfection of the Scripture, have fruitlessly wrangled about the loss of some books, which they can never prove concerning any one, that was certainly of a divine original. (3.) The full revelation of the whole mind of God, whereunto nothing pretending thereunto is ever to be added, was committed unto, and

perfected by Jesus Christ, Heb. i. 1, 2. That the revelations of God, made by him, whether in his own person, or by his Spirit unto his apostles, were also by divine inspiration committed to writing, is expressly affirmed concerning what he delivered in his own personal ministry, Luke i. 4. Acts i. 1. John xx. 31. and may be proved by uncontroulable arguments concerning the rest of them. Hence, as the Scriptures of the Old Testament were shut up with a caution and admonition unto the church, to adhere unto the law and testimony, with threatening of a curse unto the contrary, Mal. iv. 4, 5, 6. So the writings of the New Testament are closed with a curse on any that shall presume to add any thing more thereunto, Rev. xxii. 18. Wherefore,

Fourthly, The Scripture is now become the only external means of divine supernatural illumination, because it is the only repository of all divine supernatural revelation, Psal. xix. 7, 8. Isa. viii. 20. 2 Tim. iii. 15, 16, 17. The pretences of tradition, as a collateral means of preserving and communicating supernatural revelation, have been so often evicted of falsity, that I shall not further press their impeachment. Besides, I intend those in this discourse by whom it is acknowledged, that the Bible is, as a sufficient and perfect, so the only treasury of divine revelations: And what hath been offered by any to weaken or impair its esteem, by taking off from its credibility, perfection and sufficiency as unto all its own proper ends, hath brought no advantage unto the church, nor benefit unto the faith of believers. But yet,

Fifthly, In asserting the Scripture to be the only external means of divine revelation, I do it not exclusively unto those institutions of God which are subordinate unto it, and appointed as means to make it effectual unto our souls, As,

i. Our own personal endeavours in reading, studying and meditating on the Scripture, that we may come unto a right apprehension of the things contained in it, are re-

quired unto this purpose. It is known to all, how frequently this duty is pressed upon us, and what promises are annexed to the performance of it; see Deut. vi. 6, 7. chap. xi. 18, 19. Jos. i. 8. Psal. i. 2. Psal. cxix. Col. iii. 16. 2 Tim. iii. 15. Without this it is in vain to expect illumination by the word. And therefore we may see multitudes living and walking in extreme darkness when yet the word is every where nigh unto them; bread, which is the staff of life, will yet nourish no man who doth not provide it, and feed upon it; no more would manna, unless it was gathered and prepared. Our own natures, and the nature of divine revelations considered, and what is necessary for the application of the one to the other, makes this evident. For God will instruct us in his mind and will, as we are men, in and by the rational faculties of our souls. Nor is an external revelation capable of making any other impression on us, but what is so received. Wherefore, when I say, that the Scripture is the only external means of our illumination, I include therein all our own personal endeavours to come to the knowledge of the mind of God therein, which shall be afterwards spoken unto. And those, who under any pretences do keep, drive, or persuade men from reading and meditating on the Scripture, do take an effectual course to keep them in and under the power of darkness.

2. The mutual instruction of one another in the mind of God out of the Scripture, is also required hereunto. For we are obliged by the law of nature to endeavour the good of others in various degrees, as our children, our families, our neighbours, and all with whom we have conversation. And this is the principal good absolutely considered, that we can communicate unto others, namely, to instruct them in the knowledge of the mind of God. This whole duty in all the degrees of it is represented in that command, "Thou shalt teach my words diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thy house, and when thou walkest by the way,

"and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up." Deut. vi. 7. Thus when our Saviour found his disciples talking of the things of God by the way side, he bearing unto them the person of a private man, instructed them in the sense of the Scripture, Luke xxiv. 26, 27, 32. And the neglect of this duty in the world, which is so great that the very mention of it, or the least attempt to perform it, is a matter of scorn and reproach, is one cause of that great ignorance and darkness, which yet abounds among us. But the nakedness of this folly, whereby men would be esteemed christians in the open contempt of all duties of christianity, will in due time be laid open.

3. The ministry of the word in the church is that which is principally included in this assertion. The Scripture is the only means of illumination, but it becometh so principally by the application of it unto the minds of men in the ministry of the word, see Mat. v. 14, 15. 2 Cor. v. 18, 19, 20. Eph. iv. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15. 1 Tim. iii. 15. The church, and the ministry of it, are the ordinances of God unto this end, that his mind and will as revealed in the word, may be made known to the children of men, whereby they are enlightened. And that church and ministry, whereof this is not the first principal design and work, is neither appointed of God, nor approved by him. Men will one day find themselves deceived in trusting to empty names, it is duty alone, that will be comfort and reward, Dan. xii. 3.

Sixthly, That the Scripture, which thus contains the whole of divine revelation, may be a sufficient external cause of illumination unto us, two things are required.

1. That we believe it to be a divine revelation, that is the word of God, or a declaration of himself, his mind and will, immediately proceeding from him; or that it is of a pure divine original, proceeding neither from the folly or deceit, nor from the skill or honesty of men; so is it stated, 2 Pet. i. 19, 20, 21. Heb. i. 1. 2 Tim. 3, 16. Isa. viii. 20. It tenders no light or instruction under any

other notion, but as it comes immediately from God; not as the word of man, but as it is indeed the word of the living God, 1 Thess. ii. 13. And whatever any one may learn from or by the Scriptures under any other consideration, it belongeth not unto the illumination we enquire after. Nehem. viii. 8. Isa. xxviii. 9. Hos. xiv. 9. Prov. i. 6. Psal. cxix. 34. Mat. xv. 16. 2 Tim. ii. 7. 1 John v. 20.

2. That we understand the things declared in it, or the mind of God as revealed and expressed therein. For if it be given unto us a sealed book, which we cannot read, either because it is sealed, or because we are ignorant and cannot read; whatever visions or means of light it hath in it, we shall have no advantage thereby, Isa. xxix. 11, 12. It is not the words themselves of the Scripture only, but our understanding them that gives us light, Psal. cxix. 130. *פָּהָהָ רְבִידֵ יָאֵיר*,—the opening the door, the “entrance of thy word giveth light.” It must be opened, or it will not enlighten. So the disciples understood not the testimonies of the Scripture concerning the Lord Christ, they were not enlightened by them, until he expounded them unto them, Luke xxiv. 27, 45. As we have the same instance in the eunuch and Philip, Acts viii. 31, 35, 36. To this very day the nation of the Jews have the scriptures of the Old Testament, and the outward letter of them in such esteem and veneration, that they even adore and worship them; yet are they not enlightened by it. And the same is fallen out among many that are called Christians, or they could never embrace such foolish opinions, and practise such idolatries in worship as some of them do, who yet enjoy the letter of the gospel.

And this brings me to my design, which we have been thus far making way unto; and it is to shew that both these are from the Holy Ghost; namely, that we truly believe the scripture to be the word of God; and that we understand savingly the mind of God therein, both which belong unto our illumination.

That which I shall first enquire into, is the way how, and the ground whereon we come to believe the scripture to be the word of God in a due manner. For that this is required of us in a way of duty; namely, that we should believe the scripture to be the word of God with faith divine and supernatural, I suppose will not be denied, and it shall be afterwards proved. And what is the work of the Spirit of God herein, will be our first enquiry.

Secondly, Whereas we see by experience, that all who have or enjoy the Scripture, do not yet understand it, or come to an useful saving knowledge of the mind and will of God therein revealed; our other enquiry shall be, how we may come to understand the word of God aright, and what is the work of the Spirit of God in the assistance which he affordeth us unto that purpose.

With respect unto the first of these enquiries, whereunto the present discourse is singly designed, I affirm that it is the work of the Holy Spirit to enable us to believe the scripture to be the word of God, or the supernatural immediate revelation of his mind unto us, and infallibly to evidence it into our minds, so as that we may spiritually and savingly acquiesce therein. Some upon a mistake of this proposition do seem to suppose that we resolve all faith into private suggestions of the Spirit, or deluding pretences thereof, and some (it may be) will be ready to apprehend that we confound the efficient cause, and formal reason of faith or believing, rendering all rational arguments and external testimonies useless. But indeed there neither is nor shall be any occasion administered unto these fears or imaginations. For we shall plead nothing in this matter but what is consonant to the faith and judgment of the ancient and present church of God, as shall be fully evidenced in our progress. I know some have found out other ways whereby the minds of men, as they suppose, may be sufficiently satisfied in the divine authority of the Scripture. But I have tasted of their new wine and desire

it not, because I know the old to be better, though what they plead is of use in its proper place.

CHAP. II.

What it is Infallibly to Believe the Scripture as the Word of God, affirmed.

MY design requires that I should confine my discourse unto as narrow bounds as possible, and I shall so do, shewing,

1. What it is in general, infallibly to believe the Scripture to be the word of God, and what is the ground and reason of our so doing? Or, what it is to believe the Scripture to be the word of God, as we are required to believe it so to be in a way of duty.
2. That there are external arguments of the divine original of the Scripture, which are effectual motives to persuade us to give an unfeigned assent thereunto.
3. That yet moreover God requires of us, that we believe them to be his word with faith divine, supernatural, and infallible.
4. Evidence the grounds and reasons whereon we do so believe, and ought so to do.

Unto these heads most of what ensues in the first part of this discourse may be reduced.

It is meet that we should clear the foundation whereon we build, and the principles whereon we do proceed; that what we design to prove may be the better understood by all sorts of persons, whose edification we intend. For these things are the equal concernment of the learned and unlearned. Wherefore some things must be insisted on, which are generally known and granted. And our first enquiry is, What it is to believe the scripture to be the word of God with faith divine and supernatural, according as it is our duty so to do.

And in our believing or our faith, two things are to be considered. (1.) What it is that we do believe; and (2.) Wherefore we do so believe it? The first is the material object of our faith, namely, the things which we do believe; the latter the formal object of it, or the cause and reason why we do believe them; and these things are distinct. The material object of our faith, is the things revealed in the Scripture, declared unto us in propositions of truth. For things must be so proposed unto us, or we cannot believe them. That God is one in three persons, that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, and the like propositions of truth, are the material object of our faith, or the things that we do believe; and the reason why we do believe them, is, because they are proposed in the Scripture. Thus the apostle expresseth the whole of what we intend, 1 Cor. xv. 3, 4. "I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, and that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the Scriptures." Christ's death and burial and resurrection are the things proposed unto us to be believed, and so the object of our faith. But the reason why we believe them is, because they are declared in the Scriptures, see Acts viii. 28, 29, 30. Sometimes indeed this expression of believing the Scriptures by a metonymy, denotes both the formal and material objects of our faith, the Scriptures themselves as such, and the things contained in them, so John ii. 22. "They believed the Scripture and the word that Jesus said," or the things delivered in the Scripture, and further declared by Christ, which before they understood not. And they did so believe what was declared in the Scriptures, because it was so declared in them; both are intended in the same expression, "They believed the Scripture," under various considerations, so Acts xxvi. 27. The material object of our faith therefore are the articles of our creed, by whose enumeration we answer unto that question, What we believe? giving an account of the hope that is in us, as the apostle doth, Acts xxvi-

22, 23. But if moreover we are asked a reason of our faith or hope, or why we believe the things we do profess, as God to be one in three persons, Jesus Christ to be the Son of God? we do not answer, because so it is, for this is that which we believe, which were senseless. But we must give some other answer unto that enquiry, whether it be made by others or ourselves. The proper answer unto this question contains the formal reason and object of our faith, that which it rests upon and is resolved into. And this is that which we look after.

2. We do not in this enquiry intend any kind of persuasion or faith but that which is divine and infallible, both which it is from its formal reason or objective cause. Men may be able to give some kind of reasons, why they believe what they profess so to do, that will not suffice or abide the trial in this case, although they themselves may rest in them. Some it may be can give no other account hereof, but that they have been so instructed by them whom they have sufficient reason to give credit unto; or that they have so received them by tradition from their fathers. Now whatever persuasion these reasons may beget in the minds of men, that the things which they profess to believe are true, yet if they are alone, it is not divine faith whereby they do believe, but that which is merely human, as being resolved into human testimony only, or an opinion on probable arguments; for no faith can be of any other kind, than is the evidence it reflects on, or ariseth from. I say, it is so where they are alone: for I doubt not but that some who have never further considered the reason of their believing than the teaching of their instructors, have yet that evidence in their own souls of the truth and authority of God in what they believe, that with respect thereunto their faith is divine and supernatural. The faith of most hath a beginning and progress not unlike that of the Samaritans, John iv. 40, 41, 42. as shall be afterwards declared.

3. When we enquire after faith that is infallible, or be-

lieving infallibly, which, as we shall shew hereafter, is necessary in this case, we do not intend an inherent quality in the subject, as though he that believes with faith infallible must himself also be infallible ; much less do we speak of infallibility absolutely, which is a property of God, who alone from the perfection of his nature can neither deceive nor be deceived. . But it is that property or adjunct of the assent of our minds unto divine truths or supernatural revelations, whereby it is differenced from all other kinds of assent whatever. And this it hath from its formal object, or the evidence whereon we give this assent. For the nature of every assent is given unto it by the nature of the evidence which it proceedeth from, or relieth on. This in divine faith is divine revelation, which being infallible, renders the faith that rests on it, and is resolved into it, infallible also. No man can believe that which is false, or which may be false, with divine faith, for that which renders it divine, is the divine truth and infallibility of the ground and evidence which it is built upon. But a man may believe that which is true, infallibly so, and yet his faith not be infallible ; that the Scripture is the word of God is infallibly true, yet the faith whereby a man believes it so to be, may be fallible, for it is such as his evidence is, and no other ; he may believe it to be so on tradition, or the testimony of the church of Rome only, or on outward arguments, all which being fallible, his faith is so also, although the things he assents unto be infallibly true. Wherefore unto this faith divine and infallible, it is not required that the person in whom it is, be infallible ; nor is it enough that the thing itself believed be infallibly true, but moreover that the evidence whereon he doth believe it be infallible also. So it was with them who received divine revelations immediately from God : It was not enough that the things revealed unto them were infallibly true, but they were to have infallible evidence of the revelation itself ; then was their faith infallible, though their persons were fallible. With this

faith then a man can believe nothing but what is divinely true, and therefore it is infallible ; and the reason is, because God's veracity, who is the God of truth, is the only object of it : Hence saith the prophet, *האמית ייה אלהיכם ויהאמנו*—2 Chron. xx. 20. “ Believe in the Lord your God, and you shall be established ;” or that faith which is in God and his word is fixed on truth, or is infallible. Hence the enquiry in this case is, what is the reason why we believe any thing with this faith divine or supernatural ? or what it is the believing whereof makes our faith divine, infallible and supernatural ? Wherefore,

4. The authority and veracity of God revealing the material objects of our faith, or what it is our duty to believe, is the formal object and reason of our faith, from whence it ariseth and whereto it is ultimately resolved. That is, the only reason why we do believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, that God is one single essence subsisting in three persons, is because “ that God who is “ truth, the God of truth,” Deut. xxxii. 4. who “ cannot “ lie, Tit. i. 2. and whose word is truth, John xvii. 17. “ and the Spirit which gave it out is truth,” 1 John v. 6. hath revealed these things to be so ; and our believing these things on that ground renders our faith divine and supernatural. Supposing also a respect unto the subjective efficiency of the Holy Ghost, inspiring it into our minds, whereof afterwards. For to speak distinctly, our faith is supernatural, with respect unto the production of it in our minds by the Holy Ghost ; and infallible, with respect unto the formal reason of it, which is divine revelation ; and is divine, in opposition unto what is merely human on both accounts.

As things are proposed unto us to be believed as true, faith in its assent respects only the truth or veracity of God ; but whereas this faith is required of us in a way of obedience, and is considered not only physically in its nature, but morally also as our duty, it respects also the authority of God, which I therefore join with the truth of God, as

the formal reason of our faith, see 2 Sam. vii. 28. And these things the Scripture pleads and argues, when faith is required of us in the way of obedience. "Thus faith the "Lord," is that which is proposed unto us as the reason why we should believe what is spoken, whereunto oftentimes other divine names and titles are added, signifying his authority who requires us to believe: "Thus faith the Lord "God, the Holy One of Israel," Isa. xxx. 15. "Thus faith "the High and Lofty One, who inhabiteth Eternity, whose "name is Holy," Isa. lvii. 15. "Believe the Lord your "God," 2 Chron. xx. 20. The word of the Lord precedeth most revelations in the prophets, and other reason why we should believe, the Scripture proposeth none, Heb. i. 1, 2. yea the interposition of any other authority between the things to be believed and our souls and consciences, besides the authority of God, overthrows the nature of divine faith; I do not say, the interposition of any other means whereby we should believe, of which sort God hath appointed many, but the interposition of any other authority, upon which we should believe, as that pretended in and by the church of Rome. No men can be lords of our faith, though they may be "helpers of our joy."

5. The authority and truth of God, considered in themselves absolutely, are not the immediate formal object of our faith, though they are the ultimate whereinto it is resolved. For we can believe nothing on their account unless it be evidenced unto us; and this evidence of them is in that revelation which God is pleased to make of himself; for that is the only means whereby our consciences and minds are affected with his truth and authority. We do therefore no otherwise rest on the truth and veracity of God in any thing than we rest on the revelation which he makes unto us, for that is the only way whereby we are affected with them; not the Lord is true absolutely, but, thus faith the Lord, and the Lord hath spoken, is that which we have immediate regard unto. Hereby alone are our minds affected with the authority and veracity of

God, and by what way soever it is made unto us, it is sufficient and able so to affect us. At first, as hath been shewed, it was given immediately to some persons, and preserved for the use of others, in an oral ministry; but now all revelation, as hath also been declared, is contained in the Scriptures only.

6. It follows that our faith whereby we believe any divine supernatural truth, is resolved into the Scripture, as the only means of divine revelation, affecting our minds and consciences with the authority and truth of God; or the Scripture, as the only immediate, divine, infallible revelation of the mind and will of God, is the first immediate formal object of our faith, the sole reason why, and ground whereon we do believe the things that are revealed, with faith divine, supernatural and infallible. We do believe Jesus Christ to be the Son of God. Why do we so do, on what ground or reason? It is because of the authority of God commanding us so to do, and the truth of God testifying thereunto. But how or by what means are our minds and consciences affected with the authority and truth of God, so as to believe with respect unto them, which makes our faith divine and supernatural? It is alone the divine, supernatural, infallible revelation that he hath made of this sacred truth, and of his will, that we should believe it. But what is this revelation, or where is it to be found? It is the Scripture alone which contains the entire revelation that God hath made of himself in all things which he will have us to believe or do. Hence,

7. The last enquiry ariseth, how, or on what ground, for what reasons do we believe the Scripture to be a divine revelation proceeding immediately from God; or to be that word of God which is truth divine and infallible? Whereunto we answer, it is solely on the evidence that the Spirit of God in and by the Scripture itself gives unto us, that it was given by immediate inspiration from God. Or the ground and reason whereon we believe the Scripture to be the word of God, are the authority and truth of

God evidencing themselves in and by it unto the minds and consciences of men. Hereon, as whatever we assent unto as proposed in the Scripture, our faith rests on and is resolved into the veracity and faithfulness of God, so is it also in this of believing the Scripture itself to be the infallible word of God, seeing we do it on no other grounds but its own evidence that so it is.

This is that which is principally to be proved, and therefore to prepare for it, and to remove prejudices, something is to be spoken to prepare the way thereunto.

CHAP. III.

Sundry convincing external Arguments for Divine Revelation.

I. THERE are sundry cogent arguments which are taken from external considerations of the Scripture, that evince it on rational grounds to be from God. All these are motives of credibility, or effectual persuasives to account and esteem it to be the word of God. And although they neither are, nor is it possible they ever should be, the ground and reason whereon we believe it so to be with faith divine and supernatural; yet are they necessary unto the confirmation of our faith herein against temptations, oppositions, and objections. These arguments have been pleaded by many and that usefully, and therefore it is not needful for me to insist upon them. And they are the same for the substance of them in antient and modern writers, however managed by some with more learning, dexterity, and force of reasoning than by others. It may not be expected therefore that in this short discourse, designed unto another purpose; I should give them much improvement. However I shall a little touch on those which seem to be most cogent, and that in them wherein, in my apprehension, their strength doth lie. And I shall do this to manifest, that although we plead that no man can believe the Scriptures

to be the word of God with faith divine, supernatural, and infallible, but upon its own internal divine evidence and efficacy, yet we allow and make use of all those external arguments of its sacred truth and divine original which are pleaded by others, ascribing unto them as much weight and cogency as they can do, acknowledging the persuasion which they beget and effect to be as firm as they can pretend it to be: Only we do not judge them to contain the whole of the evidence which we have for faith to rest in, or to be resolved into; yea not that at all, which renders it divine, supernatural and infallible. The rational arguments we say which are, or may be used in this matter, with the human testimonies whereby they are corroborated, may and ought to be made use of and insisted on; and it is but vainly pretended that their use is superseded by our other assertions; as though where faith is required, all the subservient use of reason were absolutely discarded, and our faith thereby rendered irrational; and the assent unto the divine original and authority of the Scriptures, which the mind ought to give upon them, we grant to be of as high a nature as is pretended to be, namely, a moral certainty. Moreover, the conclusion which unprejudiced reason will make upon these arguments, is more firm, better grounded, and more pleadable, than that which is built merely on the sole authority of any church whatever. But this we assert, that there is an assent of another kind, unto the divine original and authority of the Scriptures required of us; namely, that of faith divine and supernatural. Of this none will say that it can be effected by, or resolved into the best and most cogent of rational arguments and external testimonies, which are absolutely human and fallible. For it doth imply a contradiction to believe infallibly upon fallible evidence. Wherefore I shall prove, that beyond all these arguments and their effect upon our minds, there is an assent unto the Scripture as the word of God required of us with faith divine, supernatural, and infallible; and therefore there must be a divine evidence

which is the formal object and reason of it, which alone it rests on, and is resolved into, which shall also be declared and proved. But yet, as was said in the first place, because their property is to level the ground, and to remove the rubbish of objections out of the way, that we may build the safer on the sure foundation, I shall mention some of those which I esteem justly pleadable in this cause. And,

1. The antiquity of these writings, and of the divine revelation contained in them, is pleaded in evidence of their divine original: and it may be so deservedly; for where it is absolute, it is unquestionable: that which is most antient in any kind is most true; God himself makes use of this plea against idols, Isa. xlivi. 10, 11, 12. “Ye are my witness, saith the Lord, I, even I am the Lord, and besides me there is no Saviour; I have declared and have saved, and I have shewed when there was no strange god amongst you: therefore ye are my witnesses, saith the Lord, that I am God.” That which he asserts is, that he alone is God, and no other: this he calls the people to testify by this argument, that he was among them as God, that is, in the church, before any strange god was known or named. And so it is justly pleaded in behalf of this revelation of the mind of God in the Scripture; it was in the world long before any other thing or writing pretended to be given unto the same end. Whatever therefore ensued with the like design, must either be set up in competition with it, or opposition unto it, above which it hath its advantage merely from its antiquity. Whereas therefore this writing in the first books of it, is acknowledged to be antienter than any other that is extant in the world, or indeed that ever was so, and may be proved so to be: it is beyond all reasonable apprehension that it should be of human original. For we know how low, weak, and imperfect all human inventions were at the first, how rude and unpolished in every kind, until time, observation, following additions and diminutions had shap-

ed, formed, and improved them. But this writing coming forth in the world, absolutely the first in its kind, directing us in the knowledge of God and ourselves, was at first and at once so absolutely compleat and perfect, that no art, industry, or wisdom of man, could ever yet find any just defect in it, or was able to add any thing unto it whereby it might be bettered or improved. Neither from the beginning would it ever admit of any additions unto it, but what came from the same fountain of divine revelation and inspiration, clearing itself in all ages from all addition and superfection of men whatever. This at least puts a singular character upon this book, and represents it with that reverend awe and majesty, that it is the highest petulency not to pay it a sacred respect.

This argument is pursued by many at large, as that which affordeth a great variety of historical and chronological observations. And it hath been so scanned and improved, that nothing but the giving of it a new dress remains for present or future diligence. But the real force of it lies in the consideration of the people, by and amongst whom this revelation first commenced in the world, and the time wherein it did so. When some nations had so improved and cultivated the light of nature as greatly to excel others in wisdom and knowledge, they generally looked upon the people of the Jews as ignorant and barbarous. And the more wise any of them conceived themselves, the more they despised them. And indeed they were utter strangers unto all those arts and sciences, whereby the faculties of men's minds are naturally enlightened and enlarged. Nor did they pretend unto any wisdom whereby to stand in competition with other nations, but only what they received by divine revelations. This alone God himself had taught them to look upon and esteem as their only wisdom before all the world, Deut. iv. 6, 7, 8. Now we shall not need to consider what were the first attempts of other nations, in expressing their conceptions concerning things divine, the duty, and happiness of man. The

Egyptians and Grecians were those who vied for reputation in the improvement of this wisdom. But it is known and confessed that the utmost production of their endeavours, were things foolish, irrational and absurd, contrary to the being and providence of God, to the light of nature, leading mankind into a maze of folly and wickedness. But we may consider what they attained unto in the fulness of time by their utmost improvement of science, wisdom, mutual intelligence, experience, communication, laborious study and observation. When they had added and subduced to and from the inventions of all former ages from time immemorial, when they had used and improved the reason, wisdom, invention, and conjectures of all that went before them in the study of this wisdom, and had discarded whatever they had found by experience unsuited to natural light and the common reason of mankind, yet it must be acknowledged that the apostle passeth a just censure on the utmost of their attainments, namely, that they waxed vain in their imaginations, and the world in wisdom knew not God. Whence then was it, that in one nation, esteemed barbarous, and really so with respect unto that wisdom, those arts and sciences which ennobled other nations, from that antiquity wherein it is not pretended that reason and wisdom had received any considerable improvement; without converse, communication, learning, or experience, there should at once proceed such a law, doctrine and instructions concerning God and man, so stable, certain, uniform, as should not only incomparably excel all products of human wisdom unto that purpose, however advantaged by time and experience, but also abide invariable throughout all generations, so as that whatever hath been advanced in opposition unto it, or but differing from it, hath quickly sunk under the weight of its own unseasonableness and folly? This one consideration, unless men have a mind to be contentious, gives sufficient satisfaction, that this book could have no other

original, but what it pleads for itself, namely, an immediate emanation from God.

2. It is apparent that God in all ages hath had a great regard unto it, and acted his power and care in its preservation. Were not the Bible what it pretends to be, there had been nothing more suitable to the nature of God, and more becoming Divine Providence, than long since to have blotted it out of the world. For to suffer a book to be in the world from the “beginning of times,” falsely pretending his name and authority, seducing so great a portion of mankind into a pernicious and ruinous apostacy from him, as it must do and doth, if it be not of a divine original, and exposing inconceivable multitudes of the best, wisest, and soberest among them, unto all sorts of bloody miseries which they have undergone in the behalf of it, seems not consonant unto that infinite goodness, wisdom and care wherewith this world is governed from above. But, on the contrary, whereas the malicious craft of Satan, and the prevalent power and rage of mankind, hath combined and been set at work, to the ruin and utter suppression of this book, proceeding sometimes so far as that there was no appearing way for its escape; yet through the watchful care and providence of God, sometimes putting itself forth in miraculous instances, it hath been preserved unto this day, and shall be so to the consummation of all things. The event of that which was spoken by our Saviour, Matth. v. 18. doth invincibly prove the divine approbation of this book, as that doth its divine original; “Till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one title shall in no wise pass from the law.” God’s perpetual care over the Scriptures for so many ages, that not a letter of it should be utterly lost, nothing that hath the least tendency towards its end should perish, is evidence sufficient of his regard unto it. Especially would it be so, if we should consider with what remarkable judgments and severe reflections of vengeance on its opposers, this care hath been managed, instances whereof might easily be

multiplied. And if any will not ascribe this preservation of the books of the Bible, not only in their being, but in their purity and integrity, free from the least just suspicion of corruption, or the intermixture of any thing human or heterogeneous, unto the care of God; it is incumbent on him to assign some other cause proportionate to such an effect, whilst it was the interest of heaven, and the endeavour of the earth and hell to have it corrupted and destroyed. For my part I cannot but judge that he that seeth not an hand of Divine Providence stretched out in the preservation of this book, and all that is in it, its words and syllables for thousands of years, through all the overthrows and deluges of calamities that have befallen the world, with the weakness of the means whereby it hath been preserved, and the interest, in some ages, of all those in whose power it was to have it corrupted, as it was of the apostate churches of the Jews and Christians, with the open opposition that hath been made unto it, doth not believe there is any such thing as Divine Providence at all. It was first written in the very infancy of the Babylonian empire, with which it afterwards contemporized about 900 years. By this monarchy, that people which alone had these oracles of God committed to them were oppressed, destroyed, and carried into captivity; but this book was then preserved amongst them whilst they were absolutely under the power of their enemies, although it condemned them and all their gods and religious worship, wherewith we know how horribly mankind is enraged. Satan had enthroned himself as the object of their worship, and the author of all ways of divine veneration amongst them. These they adhered unto as their principal interest, as all people do unto that they esteem their religion. In the whole world there was nothing that judged, condemned, opposed him or them, but this book only, which was now absolutely in their power. If that by any means could have been destroyed, then when it was in the hands but of a few, and those for the most part flagitious in their lives, hating the things contained in it,

and wholly under the power of their adversaries, the interest of Satan, and the whole world in idolatry, had been secured. But, through the mere provision of divine care, it outlived that monarchy, and saw the ruin of its greatest adversaries. So it did also during the continuance of the Persian monarchy which succeeded, whilst the people was still under the power of idolaters, against whom this was the only testimony in the world. By some branches of the Grecian monarchy a most fierce and diligent attempt was made to have utterly destroyed it; but still it was snatched by divine power out of the furnace, not one hair of it being singed, or the least detriment brought unto its perfection. The Romans destroyed both the people and place designed until then for its preservation, carrying the antient copy of the law in triumph to Rome on the conquest of Jerusalem; and whilst all absolute power and dominion in the whole world, where this book was known or heard of, was in their hands, they exercised a rage against it for sundry ages, with the same success that former enemies had. From the very first, all the endeavours of mankind that professed an open enmity against it have been utterly frustrate. And whereas also those unto whom it was outwardly committed, as the Jews first, and the antichristian church of apostatized Christians afterwards, not only fell into opinions and practices absolutely inconsistent with it, but also built all their present and future interests on those opinions and practices; yet none of them durst ever attempt the corrupting of one line in it, but were forced to attempt their own security, by a pretence of additional traditions, and keeping the book itself, as much as they durst, out of the hands and knowledge of all not engaged in the same interest with themselves. Whence could all this proceed but from the watchful care and power of Divine Providence? and it is brutish folly not to believe, that what God doth so protect did originally proceed from himself, seeing it pleads and pretends so to do: for every wise man

will take more care of a stranger, than a bastard falsely imposed on him unto his dishonour.

3. The design of the whole and all the parts of it hath an impress on it of divine wisdom and authority: and hereof there are two parts; First, to reveal God unto men, and secondly, to direct men to come unto the enjoyment of God. That these are the only two great concerns of our nature, of any rational being, were easy to prove, but that it is acknowledged by all those with whom I treat. Now never did any book or writing in the world, any single or joint endeavours of mankind, or invisible spirits, in the way of authority, give out a law, rule, guide, and light for all mankind universally in both these, namely, the knowledge of God and ourselves, but this book only; and if any other, it may be, like the Alcoran, did pretend in the least thereunto, it quickly discovered its own folly, and exposeth itself to the contempt of all wise and considerate men. The only question is, how it hath discharged itself in this design? for if it hath compleatly and perfectly accomplished it, it is not only evident that it must be from God, but also that it is the great benefit and kindness, that divine benignity and goodness ever granted unto mankind; for without it all men universally must necessarily wander in an endless maze of uncertainties, without ever attaining light, rest or blessedness, here or hereafter. Wherefore,

1. As it takes on itself to speak in the name and authority of God, and delivers nothing, commands nothing, but what becomes his infinite holiness, wisdom, and goodness; so it makes that declaration of him in his nature, being, and subsistence, with the necessary properties and acts thereof, his will, with all his voluntary actings or works, wherein we may be or are concerned, so as that we may know him aright, and entertain true notions and apprehensions of him, according to the utmost capacity of our finite, limited understanding. Neither do we urge his authority in this case, but here and elsewhere resort unto the evi-

dence of his reasonings compared with the event or matter of fact. What horrible darkness, ignorance and blindness was upon the whole world with respect unto the knowledge of God? what confusion and debasement of our nature ensued thereon, whilst God “ suffered all nations to walk “ in their own ways, and winked at the times of their ignorance,” the apostle declares at large, Rom. i. from the 19th verse to the end of the chapter. The sum is, That the only true God being become unknown to them, as the wisest of them acknowledged, Acts xvii. 21. and as our apostle proved against them; the devil that murderer from the beginning, and enemy of mankind, had under various pretences substituted himself in his room, and was become the “ god of this world,” as he is called, 2 Cor. iv. 4. and had appropriated all the religious devotion and worship of the generality of mankind unto himself; “ for “ the things which the Gentiles sacrificed, they sacrificed “ unto devils, and not unto God,” as our apostle affirms, 1 Cor. x. 20. and as may easily be evinced; and I have abundantly manifested it * elsewhere. It is acknowledged that some few speculative men among the heathens did seek after God in that horrid darkness wherewith they were encompassed, and laboured to reduce their conceptions and notions of his being, unto what reason could apprehend of infinite perfections, and what the works of creation and providence could suggest unto them; but as they could never come unto any certainty or consistency of notions in their own minds, proceeding but a little beyond conjecture, as is the manner of them who seek after any thing in the dark, much less with one another, to propose any thing unto the world for the use of mankind in these things by common consent; so they could none of them either ever free themselves from the grossest practical idolatry in worshipping the devil, the head of their apostacy from God; nor in the least influence the minds of the generality of mankind with any due apprehensions of the divine nature: This is the subject and substance of the

* De Natura Theologica lib. cap.

apostle's disputation against them, Rom. i. In this state of things, what misery and confusion the world lived in for many ages, what an endless labyrinth of foolish slavish superstitions and idolatries it had cast itself into, I have in another * discourse particularly declared. With respect hereunto the Scripture is well called by the apostle Peter, "a light shining in a dark place," 2 Pet. i. 19. It gives unto all men at once a perfect, clear, steady uniform declaration of God, his being, subsistence, properties, authority, rule and actings, which evidenceth itself unto the minds and consciences of all whom the god of this world hath not absolutely blinded by the power of prejudices and lusts, confirming them in an enmity unto, and hatred of God himself. There is indeed no more required to free mankind from this horrible darkness, and enormous conceptions about the nature of God, and the worship of idols, but a sedate unprejudiced consideration of the revelation of these things in the book of the Scripture. We may say therefore to all the world with our prophet, "When they say unto you, Seek unto them who have familiar spirits, and unto wizzards that peep and mutter; should not a people seek unto their God? for the living, to the dead? To the law, and to the testimony; if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them," Isa. viii. 19, 20. And this also plainly manifests the Scripture to be of a divine original. For if this declaration of God, this revelation of himself and his will, is incomparably the greatest and most excellent benefit that our nature is capable of in this world, more needful for, and useful unto mankind than the sun in the firmament, as to the proper end of their lives and beings; and if none of the wisest men in the world neither severally nor jointly could attain unto themselves, or make known unto others this knowledge of God, so that we may say with our apostle, "that in the wisdom of God, the world by wisdom knew not God," 1 Cor. i. 21. And whereas

* Ubi supra de Origine & Progressu Idolatriæ.

those who attempted any such things, yet waxed vain their imaginations and conjectures, so that no one person in the world dares own the regulation of his mind and understanding by their notions and conceptions absolutely, although they had all advantages of wisdom, and the exercise of reason above those, at the least the most of them, who wrote and published the books of the Scripture; it cannot with any pretence of reason be questioned whether they were not given by inspiration from God as they pretend and plead. There is that done in them which all the world could not do, and without the doing whereof all the world must have been eternally miserable, and who could do this but God? If any one shall judge, that that ignorance of God, which was among the Heathens of old, or as among the Indians at this day, is not so miserable a matter as we make it; or that there is any way to free them from it but by an emanation of light from the Scripture, he dwells out of my present way upon the confines of Atheism; so that I shall not divert unto any converse with him: I shall only add, that whatever notions of truth concerning God and his essence there may be found in those philosophers who lived after the preaching of the gospel in the world, or are at this day to be found among the Mahometans, or other false worshippers in the world, above those of the more ancient Pagans, they all derive from the fountain of the Scripture, and were thence by various means traduced.

2. The second end of this doctrine is to direct mankind in their proper course of living unto God, and attaining that rest and blessedness whereof they are capable, and which they cannot but desire. These things are necessary to our nature, so that without them it were better not to be; for it is better to have no being in the world, than whiles we have it always to wander, and never to act towards its proper end, seeing all that is really good unto us consists in our tendency thereunto, and our attainment of it. Now as these things were never stated in the minds

of the community of mankind, but that they lived in perpetual confusion; so the enquiries of the philosophers about the chief end of man, the nature of felicity or blessedness, the ways of attaining it, are nothing but so many uncertain and fierce digladiations, wherein not any one truth is asserted, nor any one duty prescribed, that is not spoiled and vitiated by its circumstances and ends; besides they never rose up so much as to a surmise of or about the most important matters of religion, without which it is demonstrable by reason, that it is impossible we should ever attain the end for which we are made, nor the blessedness whereof we are capable. No account could they ever give of our apostacy from God, of the depravation of our nature, of the cause or necessary cure of it. In this lost and wandering condition of mankind, the Scripture presenteth itself as a light, rule and guide unto all, to direct them in their whole course unto their end, and to bring them unto the enjoyment of God; and this it doth with that clearness and evidence as to dispel all the darkness, and to put an end unto all the confusions of the minds of men, as the sun with rising doth the shades of the night, unless they wilfully shut their eyes against it, "loving darkness rather than light, because their deeds are evil." For all the confusion of the minds of men, to extricate themselves from whence they found out and immixed themselves in endless questions to no purpose, arose from their ignorance of what we were originally, of what we now are, and how we came so to be, by what way or means we may be delivered or relieved, what are the duties of life, or what is required of us in order to our living to God as our chiefest end, and wherein the blessedness of our nature doth consist: all the world was never able to give an answer tolerably satisfactory unto any one of these enquiries, and yet unless they are all infallibly determined, we are not capable of the least rest or happiness above the beasts that perish. But now all these things are so clearly declared and stated in the Scripture, that it

comes with an evidence like a light from heaven on the minds and consciences of unprejudiced persons. · What was the condition of our nature in its first creation and constitution, with the blessedness and advantage of that condition, how we fell from it; and what was the cause, what is the nature, and what the consequents and effects of our present depravation and apostacy from God; how help and relief is provided for us herein by infinite wisdom, grace and bounty, what that help is, how we may be interested in it, and made partakers of it, what is that system of duties, or course of obedience unto God which is required of us, and wherein our eternal felicity doth consist: are all of them so plainly and clearly revealed in the Scripture, as in general to leave mankind no ground for doubt, enquiry, or conjecture; set aside inveterate prejudices from tradition, education, false notions into the mould whereof the mind is cast, the love of sin, and the conduct of lust, which things have an inconceivable power over the minds, souls, and affections of men; and the light of the Scripture in these things is like that of the sun at noon-day, which shuts up the way unto all further enquiry, and efficaciously necessitates unto an acquiescence in it; and in particular in that direction which it gives unto the lives of men, in order unto that obedience which they owe to God, and that reward which they expect from him, there is no instance conceivable of any thing conduced thereunto, which is not prescribed therein, nor of any thing which is contrary unto it, that falls not under its prohibition. Those therefore whose desire or interest it is, that the bounds and differences of good and evil should be unfixed and confounded, who are afraid to know what they were, what they are, or what they shall come unto; who care to know neither God nor themselves, their duty nor their reward, may despise this book, and deny its divine original; others will retain a sacred veneration of it, as of the offspring of God.

4. The testimony of the church may, in like manner, be

pleaded unto the same purpose: and I shall also insist upon it, partly to manifest wherein its true nature and efficacy doth consist, and partly to evince the vanity of the old pretence, that even we also who are departed from the church of Rome do receive the Scripture upon the authority thereof: whence it is further pretended, that on the same ground and reason we ought to receive whatever else it proposeth unto us.

1. The church is said to be the “ground and pillar of truth,” 1 Tim. iii. 15. which is the only text pleaded with any sobriety, to give countenance unto the assertion of the authority of the Scripture with respect unto us, to depend on the authority of the church. But the weakness of a plea to that purpose from hence hath been so fully manifested by many already, that it needs no more to be insisted on: in short, it cannot be so the “ground and pillar of truth,” that the truth should be as it were built and rest upon it as its foundation; for this is directly contrary to the same apostle, who teacheth us, that the church itself is built upon the “foundation of the prophets and apostles, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone,” Eph. ii. 20. The church cannot be the ground of truth, and truth the ground of the church in the same sense or kind: wherefore the church is the “ground and pillar of truth,” in that it holds up and declares the Scriptures, and the things contained therein so to be.

2. In receiving any thing from a church, we may consider the authority of it, or its ministry. By the authority of the church in this matter we intend no more but the weight and importance that is in its testimony, as testimonies do vary according to the worth, gravity, honesty, honour, and reputation of them by whom they are given. For to suppose an authority, properly so called, in any church, or all the churches of the world, whereon our reception of the Scripture should depend, as that which gives its authority towards us, and a sufficient warranty to our faith, is a nice imagination: for the authority and

truth of God stand not in need, nor are capable of any such attestation from men; all they will admit of from the children of men is, that they do humbly submit unto them, and testify their so doing, with the reasons of it. The ministry of the church in this matter is that duty of the church, whereby it proposeth and declareth the Scripture to be the word of God, and that as it hath occasion to all the world: and this ministry also may be considered either formally, as it is appointed of God unto this end, and blessed by him; or materially, only as the thing is done, though the grounds whereon it is done, and the manner of doing it be not divinely approved.

We wholly deny that we receive the Scripture, or ever did, on the authority of the church of Rome, in any sense whatever, for the reasons that shall be mentioned immediately. But it may be granted, that together with the ministry of other churches in the world, and many other providential means of their preservation, and successive communication, we did *de facto* receive the Scriptures by the ministry of the church of Rome also, seeing they also were in possession of them: but this ministry we allow only in the latter sense, as an actual means in subterfugy unto God's providence, without respect unto any especial institution.

And for the authority of the church in this case, in that sense wherein it is allowed, namely, as denoting the weight and importance of a testimony, which being strengthened by all sorts of circumstances, may be said to have great authority in it, we must be careful unto whom or what church we grant or allow it. For let men assume what names or titles to themselves they please, yet if the generality of them be corrupt or flagitious in their lives, and have great secular advantages, which they highly prize and studiously improve, from what they suppose and profess the Scripture to supply them with all, be they called church, or what you please, their testimony therein is of very little value; for all men may see that they have an

earthly worldly interest of their own therein. And it will be said, that if such persons did know the whole Bible to be a fable (as one pope expressed himself to that purpose) they would not forego the profession of it, unless they could more advantage themselves in the world another way. Wherefore, whereas it is manifest unto all, that those who have the conduct of the Romish church have made and do make to themselves great earthly temporal advantages, in honour, power, wealth, and reputation in the world, by their profession of the Scripture, their testimony may rationally be supposed to be so far influenced by self interest, as to be of little validity.

The testimony therefore which I intend, is that of multitudes of persons of unspotted reputation on all other accounts in the world, free from all possibility of impeachments as unto any designed evil or conspiracy among themselves, with respect unto any corrupt end, and who having not the least secular advantage by what they testified unto, were absolutely secured against all exceptions, which either common reason or common usage among mankind can put in unto any witness whatever. And to evidence the force that is in this consideration, I shall briefly represent, 1. Who they were that gave and do give this testimony in some special instances. 2. What they gave this testimony unto. 3. How or by what means they did so.

And in the first place, The testimony of those by whom the several books of the Scripture were written, is to be considered: they all of them severally and jointly witnessed, that what they wrote was received by inspiration from God. This is pleaded by the apostle Peter in the name of them all, 2 Pet. i. 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21. "For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye witnesses of his majesty. For he received from God the Father, honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

" And this voice which came from Heaven we heard, " when we were with him in the holy mount. We have " also a more sure word of prophecy, whereunto ye do " well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a " dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in " your hearts. Knowing this first, that no prophecy of " the Scripture is of any private interpretation. For the " prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but " holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy " Ghost." This is the concurrent testimony of the writers both of the Old Testament and the New; namely, that as they have certain knowledge of the things they wrote, so their writing was by inspiration from God. So in particular John beareth witness unto his revelations, chap. xix. 9. chap. xxii. 6. " These are the true and faithful sayings " of God." And what weight is to be laid hereon, is declared; Job. xxi. 24. " This is that disciple which testifieth " of these things, and wrote these things, and we know that his testimony is " true." He testified the truth of what he wrote; but how was it known to the church there intended, (we know that his testimony is true) that so it was indeed? He was not absolutely *αυτοπιστός*, or one that was to be believed in merely on his account; yet here it is spoken in the name of the church with the highest assurance; " and we " know that his testimony is true." I answer: this assurance of theirs did not arise merely from his moral or natural endowments or holy counsels, but from the evidence they had of his divine inspiration, whereof we shall treat afterwards.

The things pleaded to give force unto this testimony in particular, are all that such a testimony is capable of, and so many as would require a large discourse by itself to propose, discuss, and confirm them. But supposing the testimony they gave, I shall in compliance with my own design reduce the evidences of its truth unto these two considerations: 1. Of their persons, and 2. Of the manner of their writing.

1. As to their persons they were absolutely removed from all possible suspicion of deceiving or being deceived. The wit of all the atheistical spirits in the world is not able to fix on any one thing, that would be a tolerable ground of any such suspicion concerning the integrity of witnesses, could such a testimony be given in any other case. And surmises in things of this nature which had no pleadable ground for them, are to be looked on as diabolical suggestions, or atheistical dreams, or at best the false imaginations of weak and distempered minds. The nature and design of their work, their unconcernment with all secular interests, their unacquaintance with one another, the times and places wherein the things reported by them were done and acted, the facility of convincing them of falsehood, if what they wrote in matter of fact, which is the fountain of what else they taught, in case it were not true, the evident certainty that this would have been done arising from the known desire, ability, will and interest of their adversaries so to do, had it been possible to be effected, seeing this would have secured them the victory in the conflicts wherein they were violently engaged, and have put an immediate issue unto all that difference and uproar that was in the world about their doctrine; their harmony among themselves without conspiracy or antecedent agreement, the miseries which they underwent, most of them without hope or relief or recompence in this world, upon the sole account of the doctrine taught by themselves, with all other circumstances innumerable that are pleadable to evince the sincerity and integrity of any witnesses whatever, do all concur to prove that they did not follow cunningly devised fables, in what they declared concerning the mind and will of God as immediately from himself. To confront this evidence with bare surmises, incapable of any rational countenance or confirmation, is only to manifest what brutish impudence infidelity and atheism are forced to retreat unto for shelter.

2. Their *style* and *manner* of writing deserves a peculiar consideration: for there are impressed on it all those characters of a divine original, that can be communicated unto such an outward adjunct of divine revelation. Notwithstanding the distance of the ages and seasons wherein they lived, the difference of the languages wherein they wrote, with the great variety of their parts, abilities, education and other circumstances, yet there is upon the whole and all the parts of their writing, that gravity, majesty, and authority, mixed with plainness of speech, and absolute freedom from all appearance of affectation of esteem or applause, or any things else that derive from human frailty, as must excite an admiration in all that seriously consider them. But I have at large * elsewhere insisted on this consideration; and have also in the same place shewed that there is no other writing extant in the world that ever pretended unto a divine original, as the apocryphal books under the Old Testament, and some fragments of spurious pieces pretended to be written in the days of the apostles, but they are, not only from their matter, but from the manner of their writing, and the plain footsteps of human artifice and weakness therein, sufficient for their own conviction, and do openly discover their own vain pretensions. So must every thing necessarily do, which being merely human, pretends unto an immediate derivation from God. When men have done all they can, these things will have as evident a difference between them, as there is between wheat and chaff, between real and painted fire, Jer. xxiii. 28, 29.

3. Unto the testimony of the divine writers themselves, we must add that of those who in all ages have “believed ‘in Christ through their word,’” which is the description which the Lord Jesus Christ giveth of his church, John xvii. 20. This is the church, that is, those who wrote the Scripture; and those who believe in Christ through their word through all ages, which beareth witness to the

* Exercitat. on the Epist. to the Heb. Exer. 1.

divine original of the Scripture, and it may be added, that we know this witness is true. With these I had rather venture my faith and eternal condition, than with any society, any real or pretended church whatever. And among these there is an especial consideration to be had of those “innumerable multitudes” who in the primitive times witnessed this confession all the world over. For they had many advantages above us, to know the certainty of sundry matters of fact which the verity of our religion depends upon. And we are directed unto an especial regard of their testimony, which is signalized by Christ himself. In the great judgment that is to be passed on the world, the first appearance is of the souls of them that were beheaded for “the witness of Jesus Christ, and for “the word of God,” Rev. xx. 4. And there is at present an especial regard unto them in heaven upon the account of their witness and testimony. Rev. vi. 9, 10, 11. These were they who with the loss of their lives by the sword, and other ways of violence gave testimony unto the truth of the word of God. And to reduce these things unto a rational consideration, who can have the least occasion to suspect all those persons of folly, weakness, credulity, wickedness, or conspiracy among themselves, which such a diffused multitude was absolutely incapable of? Neither can any man undervalue their testimony, but he must comply with their adversaries against them, who were known generally to be of the worst of men. And who is there that believes there is a God, and an eternal future state, that had not rather have his soul with Paul than Nero, with the holy martyrs than their bestial persecutors? Wherefore this suffrage and testimony, begun from the first writing of the Scripture, and carried on by the best of men in all ages, and made conspicuously glorious in the primitive times of Christianity, must needs be with all wise men unavoidably cogent, at least unto a due and sedate consideration of what they bare witness unto, and

sufficient to scatter all such prejudices as atheism or profaneness may raise or suggest.

Secondly; What it was they gave testimony unto is duly to be considered. And this was not that the book of the Scripture was good, holy, and true in all the contents of it only, but that the whole and every part of it was given by divine inspiration, as their faith in this matter is expressed, 2 Pet. i. 20, 21. On this account and no other did they themselves receive the Scripture, as also believe and yield obedience unto the the things contained in it. Neither would they admit that their testimony was received, if the whole world would be content to allow of, or obey the Scripture on any other, or lower terms. Nor will God himself allow of an assent unto the Scripture under any other conception, but as the word which is immediately spoken by himself. Hence they who refuse to give credit thereunto, are said to " belie the Lord, and say it " is not he," Jer. v. 12. Yea to make " God a liar;" 1 John v. 10. If all mankind should agree together to receive and make use of this book, as that which taught nothing but what is good, useful, and profitable to human society; as that which is a complete directory unto men in all that they need to believe or do towards God, the best means under heaven to bring them to settlement, satisfaction, and assurance in the knowledge of God and themselves, as the safest guide to eternal blessedness, and therefore must needs be written and composed by persons wise, holy, and honest above all comparison, and such as had that knowledge of God and his will as is necessary unto such an undertaking, yet all this answers not the testimony given by the church of believers in all ages unto the Scriptures. It was not lawful for them, it is not for us, so to compound this matter with the world. That the whole scripture was given by " inspiration from God," that it was his word, his " true and faithful sayings," was that which in the first place they gave testimony unto, and we also are obliged so to do. They never pretended

unto any other assurance of the things they professed, nor any other reason of their faith and obedience, but that the Scripture wherein all these things are contained " was given immediately from God," or was his word. And therefore they were always esteemed no less traitors to Christianity who gave up their Bibles to persecutors, than those who denied Jesus Christ.

3. The manner wherein this testimony was given, adds to the importance of it. For 1. Many of them, especially in some seasons, gave it in, and with sundry miraculous operations. This our apostle pleadeth as a corroboration of the witness given by the first preachers of the gospel unto the truths of it; Heb. ii. 4. as the same was done by all the apostles together; Acts. v. 32. It must be granted that these miracles were not wrought immediately to confirm this single truth, that the Scripture was given by inspiration of God. But the end of miracles is to be an immediate witness from heaven, or God's attestation to their persons and ministry by whom they were wrought. His presence with them, and approbation of their doctrine, were publicly declared by them. But the miracles wrought by the Lord Christ and his apostles, whereby God gave immediate testimony unto the divine mission of their persons, and infallible truth of their doctrine, might either not have been written as most of them were not, or they might have been written and their doctrine recorded in books not given by inspiration from God. Besides, as to the miracles wrought by Christ himself, and most of those of the apostles, they were wrought among them by whom the books of the old testament were acknowledged as the oracles of God, and before the writing of those of the new; so that they could not be wrought in the immediate confirmation of the one or the other. Neither have we any infallible testimony concerning these miracles, but the Scripture itself, wherein they are recorded: whence it is necessary that we should believe the Scripture to be infallibly true before we can believe on grounds infallible the

miracles therein recorded to be so. Wherefore I grant that the whole force of this consideration lieth in this alone, that those who gave testimony to the Scripture to be the word of God, had an attestation given unto their ministry by these miraculous operations; concerning which we have good collateral security also.

2. Many of them confirmed their testimony with their sufferings, being not only witnesses but martyrs in the peculiar church notion of that word, grounded on the Scripture, Acts xxii. 20. Rev. ii. 13. chap. xi. 7. So far were they from any worldly advantage by the profession they made, and the testimony they gave, as that in the confirmation of them they willingly and cheerfully underwent whatever is evil, dreadful, or destructive to human nature in all its temporary concerns. It is therefore unquestionable that they had the highest assurance of the truth in these things which the mind of man is capable of. The management of this argument is the principal design of the apostle in the whole xith chapter of the epistle to the Hebrews. For having declared the nature of faith in general, namely, that it is the "substance of things hoped for, and the evidence of things not seen," ver. 1. that is such an assent unto, and confidence of invisible things, things capable of no demonstration from sense or reason, as respects divine revelation only, whereinto alone it is resolved: for our encouragement thereunto and establishment therein, he produceth a long catalogue of those who did, suffered, and obtained great things thereby. That which he principally insists upon is the hardships, miseries, cruelties, tortures, and several sorts of deaths which they underwent; especially from verse 35, to the end. These he calleth a cloud of witnesses wherewith we are compassed about, chap. xii. 1. giving testimony unto what we do believe, that is, divine revelation; and in an especial manner the promises therein contained, unto our encouragement in the same duty, as he there declares. And certainly what was thus testified unto by so many great, wise, and

holy persons, and that in such a way and manner, hath as great an outward evidence of its truth, as any thing of that nature is capable of in this world.

3. They gave not their testimony casually, or on some extraordinary occasion only, or by some one solemn act, or in some one certain way, as other testimonies are given nor can be given otherwise; but they gave their testimony in this cause, in their whole course, in all that they thought, spake, or did in the world, and in the whole disposal of their ways, lives and actions, as every true believer continueth to do at this day. For a man when he is occasionally called out to give a verbal testimony unto the divine original of the Scripture, ordering in the mean time the whole course of his conversation, his hopes, designs, aims and ends, without any eminent respect or regard unto it, his testimony is of no value, nor can have any influence on the minds of sober and considerate men. But when men do manifest and evince that the declaration of the mind of God in the Scripture hath a sovereign divine authority over their souls and consciences absolutely and in all things, then is their witness cogent and efficacious. There is to me a thousand times more force and weight in the testimony to this purpose of some holy persons, who universally and in all things with respect unto this world, and their future eternal condition, in all their thoughts, words, actions and ways, do really experience in themselves and express to others, the power and authority of this word of God in their souls and consciences, living, doing, suffering, and dying in peace, assurance of mind and consolation thereon, than in the verbal declaration of the most splendid numerous church in the world, who evidence not such an inward sense of its power and efficacy. There is therefore that force in the real testimony which hath been given in all ages, by all this sort of persons, not one excepted, unto the divine authority of the Scripture, that it is highly arrogant for any one to question the truth of it, without evident convictions of its imposture, which no person of any tolerable sobriety did ever yet pretend unto.

I shall add, in the last place, the consideration of that success which the doctrine derived solely from the Scripture, and resolved thereunto, hath had in the world upon the minds and lives of men, especially upon the first preaching of the gospel: and two things offer themselves herein immediately unto our consideration; First, the persons by whom this doctrine was successfully carried on in the world; and secondly, the way and manner of the propagation of it. Both which the Scripture takes notice of in particular, as evidences of that divine power which the word was really accompanied withal. For the persons unto whom this word was committed, I mean the apostles and first evangelists, were, as to their outward condition in the world, poor, low, and every way despised; and as unto the endowments of their minds, destitute of all those abilities and advantages which might give them either reputation or probability of success in such an undertaking; this the Jews marked in them with contempt; Acts iv. 13. And the Gentiles also generally despised them on the same account: as they afforded no better title to our apostle than that of a "babbler," Acts xvii. 13. so for a long time they kept up the public vogue in the world, that Christianity was the religion of idiots and men illiterate. But God had another design in this order of things, which our apostle declares upon an admission of the inconsiderable meanness of them unto whom the dispensation of the gospel was committed, 2 Cor. iv. 7. "We have this treasure in "earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be "of God, and not of us." The reason why God would make use of such instruments only in so great a work was, that through their meanness his own glorious power might be more conspicuous. There is nothing more common among men, nor more natural unto them, than to admire the excellencies of their own race and kind, and a willingness to have all evidences of a divine supernatural power clouded and hidden from them. If therefore there had been such persons employed as instruments in this work,

whose powers, abilities, qualifications and endowments, might have been probably pretended as sufficient, and the immediate causes of such an effect, there would have been no observation of the divine power or glory of God: but he who is not able to discern them in the bringing about so mighty a work by means so disproportionate thereunto, is under the power of the unrelievable prejudices intimated by our apostle in this case, 2 Cor. iv. 5, 7.

Secondly, The means which were to be used unto this end, namely, the subduing of the world unto the faith and obedience of the gospel, so erecting the spiritual kingdom of Christ in the minds of men, who before were under the power and dominion of his adversary, must either be force and arms, or eloquence, in plausible persuasive reasonings; and mighty works have been wrought by the one and the other of them. By the former have empires been set up and established in the world; and the superstition of Mahomet imposed on many nations; and the latter also hath had great effects on the minds of many. Wherefore it might have been expected that those who had engaged themselves in so great a design and work as that mentioned, should betake themselves unto the one or other of these means and ways: for the wit of man cannot contrive any way unto such an end, but what may be reduced unto one of these two, seeing neither upon the principles of nature, nor on the rules of human wisdom or policy can any other be imagined. But even both these ways were abandoned by them, and they declared against the use of either of them. For as outward force, power, and authority they had none, the use of all carnal weapons being utterly inconsistent with this work and design, so the other way of persuasive orations, of enticing words, of alluring arts and eloquence, with the like effects of human wisdom and skill, were all of them studiously declined by them in this work, as things extremely prejudicial to the success thereof, 1 Cor. ii. 4, 5. But this alone they betook themselves unto; they went up and down preach-

ing to Jews and Gentiles, "that Jesus Christ died for our "sins, and rose again according to the Scriptures," 1 Cor. xv. 3, 4. And this they did by virtue of those spiritual gifts, which were the hidden powers of the world to come, whose nature, virtue, and power, others were utterly unacquainted withal. This preaching of theirs, this preaching of the cross, both for the subject, matter and manner of it, without art, eloquence or oratory, was looked on as a marvellous foolish thing, a *swinish kind of babbling*, by all those who had got any reputation of learning or cunning amongst men. This our apostle at large discourses, 1 Cor. i. In this state of things, every thing was under as many improbabilities of success unto all rational conjectures as can be conceived. Besides, together with the doctrine of the gospel that they preached, which was new and uncouth in the world, they taught observances of religious worship in meetings, assemblies, or conventicles to that end, which all the laws in the world did prohibit, Acts xviii. 13. chap. xvi. 21. Hereupon no sooner did the rulers and governors of the world begin to take notice of them, and what they did, but they judged that it tended to sedition, and that commotions would ensue thereon. These things enraged the generality of mankind against them and their converts, who therefore made havoc of them with incredible fury. And yet notwithstanding all these disadvantages, and against all these oppositions, their doctrine prevailed to subdue the world to the obedience thereof. And there may be added unto all these things one or two considerations from the state of things at that time in the world, which signalize the quality of this work, and manifest it to have been of God.

As 1. That in the New Testament the writers of it do constantly distribute all those with whom they had to do in this world, into Jews and Greeks, which we render Gentiles, the other nations of the world coming under that denomination because of their pre-eminence on various accounts. Now the Jews at that time were *in scidum*, pop-

fested of all the true religion that was in the world; and this they boasted of as their privilege, bearing up themselves with the thoughts and reputation of it every where and on all occasions; it being at that time their great busines to gain proselytes unto it, whereon also their honour and advantage did depend. The Greeks on the other side were in as full a possession of arts, sciences, literature, and all that which the world calls wisdom, as the Jews were of religion; and they had also a religion received by a long tradition of their fathers from time immemorial, which they had variously cultivated and dressed with mysteries and ceremonies unto their own complete satisfaction. Besides the Romans, who were the ruling part of the Gentiles, did ascribe all their prosperity, and the whole raising of their stupendous empire to their gods, and the religious worship they gave unto them; so that it was a fundamental maxim in their policy and rule, that they should prosper or decay, according as they observed or were negligent in the religion they had received. As indeed not only those who owned the true God and his providence, but before idolatory and superstition had given place unto atheism, all people did solemnly impate all their atchievements and successes unto their gods, as the prophet speaks of the Chaldeans, Mal. i. 11. And he who first undertook to record the exploits of the nations of the world, doth constantly assign all their good and evil unto their gods, as they were pleased or proyoked. The Romans in especial boasted that their religion was the cause of their prosperity; *Pietate & religione atq; hac una sapientia, quod De rum immortalium numine omnia regi gubernariq; prospexit, omnes gentes nationesq; superamus,* says their great oracle, *Orat. de Har. Resp.* And Dionysius of Halicarnassus, a great and wise historian, giving an account of the religion of the Romans, and the ceremonies of their worship, affirms, that he doth it unto this end, that those who have been ignorant of the Roman piety, shoule cease to wonder at their prosperity and successes in all their wars, seeing by reason of their religion

they had the gods always propitious and succourable unto them. Antiq. Rom. lib. 2. The consideration hereof made them so obstinate in their adherence unto their present religion, that when after many ages and hundreds of years, some books of Numa their second king, and principal establisher of their commonwealth, were occasionally found, instead of paying them any respect, they ordered them to be burnt, because one who had perused them, took his oath that they were contrary to their present worship and devotion. And this was that, which upon the declension of their empire after the prevalency of the Christian religion, those who were obstinate in their Paganism reflected severely upon the Christians; the relinquishment of their old religion they fiercely avowed to be the cause of all their calamities. In answer unto which calumny principally Austin wrote his excellent discourse, *de civitate Dei*.

In this state of things the preachers of the gospel come among them, and not only bring a new doctrine, under all the disadvantages before mentioned, and moreover that he who was the head of it was newly crucified by the present powers of the earth for a malefactor; but also such a doctrine as was expressly to take away the religion from the Jews, and the wisdom from the Greeks, and the principal maxim of polity from the Romans, whereon they thought they had raised their empire. It were easy to declare how all those facts were engaged in worldly interest, honour, reputation, principles of safety, to oppose, decry, condemn, and reject this new doctrine. And if a company of sorry craftsmen were able to fill a whole city with tumult and uproar against the gospel, as they did when they apprehended it would bring in a decay of their trade, Acts xix. what can we think was done in all the world, by all those who were engaged and enraged by higher provocations? It was as death to the Jews to part with their religion, both on the account of the conviction they had of its truth, and the honour they esteemed to accrue to themselves thereby. And for the Greeks to have

all that wisdom, which they and their forefathers had been labouring in for so many generations, now to be all rejected as an impertinent foolery by the sorry preachings of a few illiterate persons; it raised them unto the highest indignation. And the Romans were wise enough to secure the fundamental maxim of their state. Wherefore the world seemed very sufficiently fortified against the admission of this new and strange doctrine, on the terms whereon it was proposed. There can be no danger sure that ever it should obtain any considerable progress: But we know that things fell out quite otherwise; religion, wisdom, and power, with honour, profit, interest, reputation, were forced all to give way to its power and efficacy.

2. The world was at that time in the highest enjoyment of peace, prosperity and plenty, that ever it attained from the entrance of sin; and it is known how from all these things are usually made provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof. Whatever the pride, ambition, covetousness, sensuality of any persons could carry them forth to lust after, the world was full of satisfactions for. And most men lived as in the eager pursuit of their lusts, so in a full supply of what they did require. In this condition the gospel is preached unto them, requiring at once, and that indispensibly, a renunciation of all those worldly lusts, which before had been the salt of their lives. If men designed any compliance with it, or interest in it, all their pride, ambition, luxury, covetousness, sensuality, malice, revenge, must all be mortified and rooted up. Had it only been a new doctrine and religion, declaring that knowledge and worship of God which they never heard of before, they could not but be very wary in giving it entertainment; but when withal it required at the first instant, that for its sake they should pull out their right eyes, and cut off their right hands, to part with all that was dear and useful unto them, and which had such a prevalent interest in their minds and affections, as corrupt lusts are known to have; this could not but invincibly fortify them against

its admittance. But yet this also was forced to give place, and all the fortifications of Satan therein was by the power of the word cast to the ground, as our apostle expresseth it, 2 Cor. x. 4, 5. Where he gives an account of that warfare, whereby the world was subdued to Christ by the gospel. Now a man, that hath a mind to make himself an instance of conceited folly and pride, may talk as though there was in all this no evidence of divine power giving testimony to the Scripture, and the doctrine contained in it, but the characters of it are so legible unto every modest and sedate prospect, that they leave no room for doubt or hesitation.

But the force of the whole argument is liable unto one exception of no small moment, which must therefore necessarily be taken notice of and removed. For whereas we plead the power, efficacy and prevalency of the gospel in former days, as a demonstration of its divine original, it will be enquired, whence it is, that it is not still accompanied with the same power, nor doth produce the same effects. For we see the profession of it is now confined to narrow limits, in comparison of what it formerly extended itself unto; neither do we find that it gets ground any where in the world, but is rather more and more straitned every day. Wherefore either the first prevalency that is asserted unto it, and argued as an evidence of its divinity, did indeed proceed from some other accidental causes in an efficacious though unseen concurrence, and was not by an emanation of power from itself; or the gospel is not at present what it was formerly, seeing that it hath not the same effect upon, or power over the minds of men, as that it had of old. We may therefore suspend the pleading of this argument from what was done by the gospel formerly, lest it reflect disadvantage upon what we profess at present.

Ans. 1. Whatever different events may fall out at different seasons, yet the gospel is the same as ever it was from the beginning. There is not another book, containing another doctrine, crept into the world instead of that once

delivered unto the saints. And whatever various apprehensions men may have through their weakness or prejudices concerning the things taught therein, yet are they in themselves absolutely the same that ever they were, and that without the loss or change of a material word or syllable in the manner of their delivery. This I have proved elsewhere, and it is a thing capable of the most evident demonstration. Wherefore, whatever entertainment this gospel meets withal at present in the world, its former prevalency may be pleaded in justification of its divine original.

2. The cause of this event lieth principally in the sovereign will and pleasure of God. For although the Scriptures be his word, and he hath testified it so to be by his power, put forth and exerted in dispensations of it unto men, yet is not that divine power included or shut up in the letter of it, so that it must have the same effect wherever it comes. We plead not that there is absolutely in itself, its doctrine, the preaching or preachers thereof, such a power as it were naturally and physically to produce the effects mentioned: but it is an instrument in the hand of God unto that work which is his own, and he puts forth his power in it and by it, as it seems good unto him. And if he doth at any time so put forth his divine power in the administration of it, or in the use of this instrument, as that the great worth and excellency of it shall manifest itself to be from him, he giveth a sufficient attestation of it. Wherefore the times and seasons of the prevalency of the gospel in the world are in the hand and at the sovereign disposal of God; and as he is not obliged ("for who hath known the mind of the Lord, or who hath been his counsellor?") to accompany it with the same power at all times and seasons; so the evidence of his own power going along with it at any time whilst under an open claim of a divine original, is an uncontrollable approbation of it. Thus at the first preaching of the word, to fulfil the promises made unto the fathers from

the foundation of the world, to glorify his Son Jesus Christ, and the gospel itself which he had revealed, he put forth that effectual divine power in its administration, whereby the world was subdued unto the obedience of it. And the time will come when he will revive the same work of power and grace to retrieve the world into a subjection to Jesus Christ. And although he doth not in these latter ages cause it to run and prosper among the nations of the world, who have not as yet received it, as he did formerly, yet considering the state of things at present among the generality of mankind, the preservation of it in that small remnant by whom it is obeyed in sincerity, is a no less glorious evidence of his presence with it, and care over it, than was its eminent propagation in days of old.

3. The righteousness of God is in like manner to be considered in these things: for whereas he had granted the inestimable privilege of his word unto many nations, they, through their horrible ingratitude and wickedness, "detained the truth in unrighteousness;" so that the continuance of the gospel among them was no way to the glory of God, nor nor yet unto their own advantage: for neither nations nor persons will ever be advantaged by an outward profession of the gospel, whilst they live in a contradiction and disobedience to its precepts; yea nothing can be more pernicious to the souls of men. This impiety God is at this day revenging on the nations of the world, having utterly cast off many of them from the knowledge of the truth, and given up others unto strong delusions, to believe lies; though they retain the Scripture and outward profession of Christianity. How far he may proceed in the same way of righteous vengeance towards others also, we know not, but ought to tremble in consideration of it. When God first granted the gospel unto the world, although the generality of mankind had greatly sinned against the light of nature, and had rejected all those supernatural revelations that at any time

had been made unto them; yet had they not sinned against the gospel itself, nor the grace thereof. It pleased God therefore to wink at, and pass over that time of their ignorance, so as that his justice should not be provoked by any of their former sins, to withhold the efficacy of his divine power in the administration of the gospel from them, whereby he called them to repentance. But now after that the gospel hath been sufficiently tendered unto all nations, and hath, either as unto its profession, or as unto its power with the obedience that it requires, been rejected by the most of them; things are quite otherwise stated. It is from the righteous judgment of God, revenging the sins of the world against the gospel itself, that so many nations are deprived of it, and so many left obstinate in its refusal. Wherefore the present state of things doth no way weaken or prejudice the evidence given unto the Scripture by that mighty power of God, which accompanied the administration of it in the world. For what hath since fallen out, there are secret reasons of sovereign wisdom, and open causes in divine justice, whereunto it is to be affigned.

These things I have briefly called over, and not as though they were all of this kind that may be pleaded, but only to give some instance of those external arguments, whereby the divine authority of the Scripture may be confirmed.

Now these arguments are such as are able of themselves to beget in the minds of men, sober, humble, intelligent, and unprejudiced, a firm opinion, judgment and persuasion, that the Scripture doth proceed from God. Where persons are prepossessed with invincible prejudices contracted by a course of education, wherein they have imbibed principles opposite and contrary thereunto, and have increased and fortified them by some fixed and hereditary enmity against all those whom they know to own the divinity of the Scripture, as it is with Mahometans, and some of the Indians; these arguments it may be will not

prevail immediately to work nor effect their assent. It is so with respect unto them also, who out of love unto, and delight in those ways of vice, sin, and wickedness, which are absolutely and severely condemned in the Scripture, without the least hope of a dispensation unto them that continue under the power of them, who will not take these arguments into due consideration. Such persons may talk and discourse of them, but they never weigh them seriously according as the importance of the cause doth require. For if men will examine them as they ought, it must be with a sedate judgment, that their eternal condition depends upon a right determination of this enquiry. But for those who can scarce get liberty from the service and power of their lusts, seriously to consider what is their condition, or what it is like to be ; it is no wonder if they talk of these things after the manner of these days, without any impression on their minds and affections, or influence on the practical understanding. But our enquiry is after what is a sufficient evidence for the conviction of rational and unprejudiced persons, and the defeating of objections to the contrary, which these and the like arguments do every way answer.

Some think fit here to stay, that is, in these or the like external arguments, or rational motives of faith, such as render the Scriptures so credible, as that it is an unreasonable thing not to assent unto them. That certainty which may be attained on these arguments and motives, is (as they say) the highest which our minds are capable of with respect unto this object, and therefore includes all the assent which is required of us unto this proposition, that the Scriptures are the word of God; or all the faith whereby we believe them so to be. When I speak of these arguments, I intend not them alone which I have insisted on, but all others of the same kind, some whereof have been urged and improved by others with great diligence, for in the variety of such arguments as offer themselves in this cause everyone chooseth out what seems to him most cogent,

and some amass all that they can think on. Now these arguments with the evidence tendered in them are such, as nothing but perverse prejudice can detain men from giving a firm assent unto. And no more is required of us, but that according to the motives that are proposed unto us, and the arguments used to that purpose, we come unto a judgment and persuasion, called a moral assurance of the truth of the Scripture, and endeavour to yield obedience unto God accordingly.

And it were to be wished that there were more than it is feared there are, who were really so affected with these arguments and motives. For the truth is, tradition and education practically bear the whole sway in this matter. But yet when all this is done, it will be said, that all this is but a mere natural work, whereunto no more is required, but the natural exercise and acting of our own reason and understanding; that the arguments and motives used, though strong, are human and fallible, and therefore the conclusion we make from them is so also, and wherein we may be deceived; that an assent grounded and resolved into such rational arguments only, is not faith in the sense of the Scripture; in brief, that it is required that we believe the Scripture to be the word of God with faith divine and supernatural, which cannot be deceived. Two things are replied hereunto.

1. That where the things believed are divine and supernatural, so is the faith whereby we believe them, or give our assent unto them. Let the motives and arguments whereon we give our assent be of what kind they will, so that the assent be true and real, and the things believed be divine and supernatural, the faith whereby we believe them is so also. But this is all one, as if in things natural a man should say, our sight is green when we see that which is so, and blue when we see that which is blue. And this would be so in things moral, if the specification of acts were from their material objects; but it is certain that they are not of the same nature always with the things

they are conversant about, nor are they changed thereby from what their nature is in themselves, be it natural or supernatural, human or divine. Now things divine are only the material object of our faith, as hath been shewed before; and by an enumeration of them do we answer unto the question, What is it that you do believe? But it is the formal object or reason of all our acts from whence they are denominated, or by which they are specified. And the formal reason of our faith, assent or believing, is that which prevails with us to believe, and on whose account we do so, wherewith we answer unto that question, Why do you believe? If this be human authority, arguments highly probable, but absolutely fallible, motives cogent, but only to beget a moral persuasion, whatever we do believe thereon, our faith is human, fallible, and a moral assurance only. Wherefore it is said,

2. That this assent is sufficient, all that is required of us, and contains in it all the assurance which our minds are capable of in this matter. For no further evidence nor assurance is in any case to be enquired after, than the subject matter will bear. And so is it in this case, where the truth is not exposed to sense, nor capable of a scientifical demonstration, but must be received upon such reasons and arguments, as carry it above the highest probability, though they leave it beneath science or knowledge, or infallible assurance; if such a persuasion of mind there be.

But yet I must needs say, that although those external arguments, whereby learned and rational men have proved, or may yet further prove the Scripture to be a divine revelation given of God, and the doctrine contained in it to be a heavenly truth, are of singular use for the strengthening of the faith of them that do believe, by relieving the mind against temptations and objections that will arise to the contrary, as also for the conviction of gainsayers; yet to say that they contain the formal reason of that assent, which is required of us unto the Scripture as the word of God, that our faith is the effect and product of them,

which it rests upon and is resolved into, is both contrary to the Scripture, destructive of the nature of divine faith, and exclusive of the work of the Holy Ghost in this whole matter.

Wherefore I shall do these two things before I proceed to our principal argument designed. 1. I shall give some few reasons, proving that the faith whereby we believe the Scripture to be the word of God is not a mere firm moral persuasion, built upon external arguments and motives of credibility; but is divine and supernatural, because the formal reason of it is so also. 2. I shall shew what is the nature of that faith, whereby we do or ought to believe the Scripture to be the word of God; what is the work of the holy Spirit about it, and what is the proper object of it. In the first I shall be very brief, for my design is to strengthen the faith of all, and not to weaken the opinions of any.

CHAP. IV.

Moral certainty, the result of external arguments, ineffectual.

DIVINE Revelation is the proper object of divine faith. With such faith we can believe nothing but what is so, and what is so can be received no otherwise by us. If we believe it not with divine faith, we believe it not at all. Such is the Scripture as the word of God every where proposed unto us; and we are required to believe, that is, first to believe it so to be, and then to believe the things contained in it. For this proposition, that the Scripture is the word of God, is a divine revelation, and so to be believed. But God no where requires, nor ever did, that we should believe any divine revelation upon such grounds, much less on such grounds and motives only. They are left unto us as consequential unto our believing, to plead with others in behalf of what we profess, and for the justification of it unto the world.

But that which requires our faith and obedience unto in the receiving of divine revelations, whether immediately given and declared, or as recorded in the Scripture, is his own authority and veracity, "I am the Lord, the High and Lofty One. Thus saith the Lord. To the law and to the testimony. This is my Son, hear him. All Scripture is given by inspiration from God. Believe the Lord and his prophets." This alone is that which he requires us to resolve our faith into. So when he gave unto us the law of our lives, the eternal and unchangeable rule of our obedience unto him, in the ten commandments, he gives no other reason to oblige us thereunto, but this only, "I am the Lord thy God." The sole formal reason of all our obedience is taken from his own nature and our relation unto him. Nor doth he propose any other reason why we should believe him, or the revelation which he makes of his mind and will. And our faith is part of our obedience, the root, and principal part of it; therefore the reason of both is the same. Neither did our Lord Jesus Christ nor his apostles ever make use of such arguments or motives for the engendering of faith in the minds of men; nor have they given directions for the use of any such arguments to this end and purpose. But when they were accused to have followed cunningly devised fables, they appealed unto Moses and the prophets, to the revelation they had themselves received, and those that were before recorded. It is true they wrought miracles in confirmation of their own divine mission, and of the doctrine which they taught. But the miracles of our Saviour were all of them wrought amongst those who believed the whole Scripture then given to be the word of God; and those of the apostles were before the writings of the books of the New Testament. Their doctrine therefore materially considered, and their warranty to teach it, was sufficiently, yea, abundantly confirmed by them. But divine revelation formally considered, and as written, was left upon the old foundation of the authority

of God who gave it. No such method is prescribed, no such example is proposed unto us in the Scripture, to make use of these arguments and motives for the conversion of the souls of men unto God, and the ingenerating of faith in them. Yea in some cases the use of such means is decried as unprofitable, and the sole authority of God, putting forth his power in and by his word, is appealed unto, 1 Cor. ii. 4, 5, 13. chap. xiv. 26, 27. 2 Cor. iv. 7. But yet in a way of preparation subservient unto the receiving the Scripture as the word of God, and for the defence of it against gainsayers and their objections, their use hath been granted and proved. But from first to last, in the Old and New Testament, the authority and truth of God are constantly and uniformly proposed as the immediate ground and reason of believing his revelations; nor can it be proved that he doth accept or approve of any kind of faith or assent, but what is built thereon and resolved thereinto. The sum is, we are obliged in a way of duty; to believe the Scriptures to be a divine revelation, when they are ministerially or providentially proposed unto us, whereof afterwards. The ground whereon we are to receive them is the authority and veracity of God speaking in them; we believe them because they are the word of God. Now this faith whereby we so believe is divine and supernatural, because the formal reason of it is so, namely God's truth and authority. Wherefore we do not, nor ought to believe the Scripture as highly probable, or with a moral persuasion and assurance built upon arguments absolutely fallible, and human only. For if this be the formal reason of faith, namely, the veracity and authority of God, if we believe not with faith divine and supernatural, we believe not at all.

2. The moral certainty treated of, is a mere effect of reason. There is no more required unto it, but that the reasons proposed for the assent required, be such as the mind judgeth to be convincing and prevalent, whence an inferior kind of knowledge, or a firm opinion, or some

kind of persuasion, which hath not yet gotten an intelligible name, doth necessarily ensue. There is therefore on this supposition no need of any work of the Holy Ghost, to enable us to believe, or to work faith in us; for no more is required herein but what necessarily ariseth from a naked exercise of reason. If it be said, that the enquiry is not about what is the work of the Spirit of God in us; but concerning the reasons and motives to believing that are proposed unto us, I answer, it is granted; but that we urge herein is, that the act which is exerted on such motives, or the persuasion which is begotten in our minds by them is purely natural, and such as requires no special work of the Holy Ghost in us for the effecting of it. Now this is not faith, nor can we be said in the Scripture sense to believe thereby, and so in particular not the Scriptures to be the word of God. For faith "is the gift of God," and "is not of ourselves," Eph. ii. 8. It is given unto some on the behalf of Christ," Phil. i. 29. and not unto others, Matt. xi. 29. chap xiii. 11. But this assent on external arguments and motives is of ourselves, equally common and exposed unto all. "No man can say that Jesus "is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost," 1 Cor. xii. 3. but he who believeth the Scripture truly aright, and according to his duty, doth say so. No man cometh to Christ, but he that hath "heard and learned of the Father," John vi. 45. and as this is contrary to the Scripture, so it is expressly condemned by the antient church; particularly by the second Araufican council, Can. 5. 7. *Si quis sicut augmentum ita etiam initium Fidei, ipsumq; credulitatis affectum, non per gratiae donum, id est, per inspirationem Spiritus Sancti, corrigentem voluntatem nostram ab infidelitate ad fidem, ab impietate ad pietatem, sed naturaliter nobis inesse dicit, Apostolicis Dogmatibus adversarius approbatur.* And plainly, Can. 7. *Si quis per naturae vigorem bonum aliquod quod ad salutem pertinet vitæ eternæ cogitare ut expedite, aut eligere, sive salutari, id est, evangelice Prædicationi consentire posse affirmat absq; illumine natione et inspiratione Spiritus Sancti,*

qui dat omnibus suavitatem consentiendo et credendo veritati, bæretico fallitur Spiritu.

It is still granted that the arguments intended (that is all of them which are true indeed, and will endure a strict examination, for some are frequently made use of in this cause which will not endure a trial) are of good use in their place and unto their proper end, that is to beget such an assent unto the truth as they are capable of effecting. For although this be not that which is required of us in a way of duty, but inferior to it, yet the mind is prepared and disposed by them unto the receiving of the truth in its proper evidence.

3. Our assent can be of no other nature than the arguments and motives whereon it is built, or by which it is wrought in us, as in decree it cannot exceed their evidence. Now these are all human and fallible: exalt them unto the greatest esteem possible, yet because they are not demonstrations, nor do necessarily beget a certain knowledge in us (which indeed if they did, there were no room left for our faith or our obedience therein) they produce an opinion only, though in the highest kind of probability, and firm against objections. For we will allow the utmost assurance that can be claimed upon them. But this is exclusive of all divine faith as to any article, thing, matter or objection to be believed. For instance; a man professeth that he believes Jesus Christ to be the Son of God. Demand the reason why he doth so, and he will say, because God who cannot lie, hath revealed and declared him so to be, proceed yet further and ask him, where or how God hath revealed and declared this so to be? and he will answer, in the Scripture which is his word; enquire now further of him, which is necessary, wherefore he believes this Scripture to be the word of God, or an immediate revelation given out from him; for hereunto we must come and have somewhat that we may ultimately rest in, excluding in its own nature all further enquiries, or we can have neither certainty nor stability in our faith?

On this supposition his answer must be, that he hath many cogent arguments that render it highly probable so to be, such as have prevailed with him to judge it so to be, and whereon he is fully persuaded, as having the highest assurance hereof that the matter will bear, and so doth firmly believe them to be the word of God. Yea, but it will be replied, all these arguments are in their kind or nature human, and therefore fallible, such as it is possible they may be false; for every thing may be so that is not immediately from the first essential verity. This assent therefore unto the Scriptures as the word of God is human, fallible; and such as wherein we may be deceived: and our assent unto the things revealed can be of no other kind than that we give unto the revelation itself; for thereinto it is resolved, and thereunto it must be reduced; these waters will rise no higher than their fountain. And thus at length we come to believe Jesus Christ to be the Son of God with a faith human and fallible, and which at last may deceive us; which is to receive the word of God as the word of men, and not as it is in truth the word of God, contrary to the apostle, 1 Thess. ii. 13. Wherefore,

4. If I believe the Scripture to be the word of God with ~~an~~ human faith only, I do no otherwise believe whatever is contained in it, which overthrows all faith properly so called. And if I believe what is contained in the Scripture with faith divine and supernatural, I cannot but by the same faith believe the Scripture itself, which removes the moral certainty treated of out of our way: and the reason of this is, that we may believe the revelation, and the things revealed with the same kind of faith, or we bring confusion on the whole work of believing. No man living can distinguish in his experience between that faith wherewith he believes the Scripture, and that wherewith he believes the doctrine of it, or the things contained in it; nor is there any such distinction intimated in the Scripture itself; but all our believing is absolutely resolved into the

authority of God revealing. Nor can it be rationally apprehended that our assent unto the things revealed, should be of a kind and nature superior unto that which we yield unto the revelation itself. For let the arguments which it is resolved into be ever so evident and cogent, let the assent itself be as firm and certain as can be imagined, yet is it human still, and natural, and therein is inferior to that which is divine and supernatural. And yet on this supposition that which is of a superior kind and nature is wholly resolved into that which is of an inferior, and must betake itself on all occasions thereunto for relief and confirmation. For the faith whereby we believe Jesus Christ to be the Son of God, is on all occasions absolutely melted down into that whereby we believe the Scriptures to be the word of God.

But none of these things are my present especial design, and therefore I have insisted long enough upon them. I am not enquiring what grounds men have to build an opinion, or any kind of human persuasion upon, that the Scriptures are the word of God, no, nor yet how we may prove or maintain them so to be unto gainsayers; but what is required hereunto that we may believe them to be so, with faith divine and supernatural, and what is the work of the Spirit of God therein.

But it may be further said, that these external arguments and motives are not of themselves, and considered separately from the doctrine which they testify unto, the sole ground and reason of our believing. For if it were possible that a thousand arguments of a like cogency with them were offered to confirm any truth or doctrine, if it had not a divine worth and excellency in itself, they could give the mind no assurance of it: wherefore it is the truth itself, or doctrine contained in the Scripture which they testify unto, that animates them and gives them their efficacy, for there is such a majesty, holiness, and excellency in the doctrine of the gospel, and moreover such a suitableness in them unto unprejudiced reason, and such an

answerableness unto all the rational desires and expectations of the soul, as evidence their procedure from the fountain of infinite wisdom and goodness. It cannot but be conceived impossible that such excellent, heavenly mysteries, of such use and benefit unto all mankind, should be the product of any created industry. Let but a man know himself, his state and condition in any measure, with a desire of that blessedness which his nature is capable of, and which he cannot but design; when the Scripture is proposed unto him in the ministry of the church, attested by the arguments insisted on, there will appear unto him in the truths and doctrines of it, or in the things contained in it, such an evidence of the majesty and authority of God, as will prevail with him to believe it to be a divine revelation. And this persuasion is such, that the mind is established in its assent unto the truth, so as to yield obedience unto all that is required of us. And whereas our belief of the Scripture is in order only to the right performance of our duty, or all that obedience which God expecteth from us, our minds being guided by the precepts and directions, and duly influenced by the promises and threatenings of it thereunto, there is no other faith required of us but what is sufficient to oblige us unto that obedience.

This being, so far as I can apprehend, the substance of what is by some learned men proposed and adhered unto, it shall be briefly examined. And I say here as on other occasions, that I should rejoice to see more of such a faith in the world, as would effectually oblige men unto obedience out of a conviction of the excellency of the doctrine and the truth of the promises and threatenings of the word, though learned men should never agree about the formal reason of faith. Such notions of truth when most diligently enquired into, are but as sacrifice compared with obedience. But the truth itself is also to be enquired after diligently.

This opinion therefore either supposeth what we shall

immediately declare, namely, the necessity of an internal effectual work of the Holy Spirit in the illumination of our minds, so enabling us to believe with faith divine and supernatural, or it doth not. If it doth, it will be found, as I suppose, for the substance of it to be co-incident with what we shall afterwards assert and prove to be the formal reason of believing. However as it is usually proposed, I cannot absolutely comply with it, for these two reasons among others.

1. It belongs unto the nature of faith, of what sort soever it be, that it be built on and resolved into testimony. This is that which distinguisheth it from any other conception, knowledge or assent of our minds, on other reasons and causes. And if this testimony be divine, so is that faith whereby we give assent unto it, on the part of the object. But the doctrines contained in the Scripture, or the subject matter of the truth to be believed, have not in them the nature of a testimony, but are the material, not formal objects of faith, which must always differ. If it be said that these truths or doctrines do so evidence themselves to be from God, as that in and by them we have the witness and authority of God himself proposed unto us, to resolve our faith into, I will not further contend about it, but only say, that the authority of God, and so his veracity, do manifest themselves primarily in the revelation itself, before they do so in the things revealed, which is that we plead for.

2. The excellency of the doctrine or things revealed in the Scriptures respects not so much the truth of them in speculation, as their goodness and suitableness unto the souls of men, as to their present condition and eternal end. Now things under that consideration respect not so much faith, as spiritual sense and experience. Neither can any man have a due apprehension of such a goodness suitable unto our constitution and condition, with absolute usefulness in the truth of the Scripture, but on a supposition of that antecedent assent of the mind

unto them, which is believing; which therefore cannot be the reason why we do believe.

But if this opinion proceed not upon the aforesaid supposition (immediately to be proved) but requires no more unto our satisfaction in the truth of the Scripture and assent theron, but the due exercise of reason, or the natural faculties of our minds about them when proposed unto us, then I suppose it to be most remote from the truth, and that amongst many other reasons; for these that ensue.

1. On this supposition the whole work of believing would be a work of reason. Be it so, say some, nor is it meet it should be otherwise conceived. But if so, then the object of it must be things so evident in themselves and their own nature, as that the mind is as it were compelled by that evidence unto an assent, and cannot do otherwise. If there be such a light and evidence in the things themselves, with respect unto our reason in the right use and exercise of it, then is the mind thereby necessitated unto its assent; which both overthrows the nature of faith, substituting an assent upon natural evidence in the room thereof, and is absolutely exclusive of the necessity or use of any work of the Holy Ghost in our believing, which sober Christians will scarce comply withal.

2. There are some doctrines revealed in the Scripture, and those of the most importance that are so revealed, which concern and contain things so above our reason, that without some previous supernatural dispositions of mind, they carry in them no evidence of truth unto mere reason, nor of suitability unto our constitution and end. There is required unto such an apprehension both the spiritual elevation of the mind by supernatural illumination, and a divine assent unto the authority of the revelation thereon, before reason can be so much as satisfied in the truth and excellency of such doctrines. Such are those concerning the Holy Trinity, or the substance of one singular essence in three distinct persons; the incarnation of the Son of God; the resurrection of the dead, and sundry other that are the most proper

subjects of divine revelation. There is an heavenly glory in some of these things, which as reason can never thoroughly apprehend because it is finite and limited, so as it is in us by nature, it can neither receive them, nor delight in them as doctrinally proposed unto us, with all the aids and assistance before mentioned. Flesh and blood reveals not these things unto our minds, but our Father which is in heaven. Nor doth any man know these mysteries of the kingdom of God, but he unto whom it is given; nor do any learn these things aright, but those that are taught of God.

3. Take our reason singly, without the consideration of divine grace and illumination, and it is not only weak and limited, but depraved and corrupted. And the carnal mind cannot subject itself unto the authority of God in any supernatural revelation whatever. Wherefore the truth is, that the doctrines of the gospel, which are purely and absolutely so, are so far from having a convincing evidence in themselves of their divine truth, excellency and goodness, unto the reason of men as unrenewed by the Holy Ghost, as that they are foolishness and most undesirable unto it, as I have elsewhere proved at large. We shall therefore proceed.

There are two things considerable with respect unto our believing the Scriptures to be the word of God in a due manner, or according to our duty. The first respects the subject, or the mind of man, how it is enabled thereunto; the other the object to be believed, with the true reason why we do believe the Scripture with faith divine and supernatural.

The first of these must of necessity fall under our consideration herein, as that without which, whatever reasons, evidences or motives are proposed unto us, we shall never believe in a due manner. For whereas the mind of man, or the minds of all men are by nature depraved, corrupt, carnal, and enmity against God; they cannot of themselves, or by virtue of any innate ability of their own, understand

or assent unto spiritual things in a spiritual manner, which we have sufficiently proved and confirmed before. Wherefore that assent which is wrought in us by mere external arguments, consisting in the rational conclusion and judgment which we make upon their truth and evidence, is not that faith wherewith we ought to believe the word of God.

Wherefore that we may believe the Scriptures to be the word of God according to our duty, as God requireth it of us, in an useful, profitable, and saving manner, above and beyond that natural human faith and assent, which is the effect of the arguments and motives of credibility before insisted on, with all others of the like kind, there is and must be wrought in us, by the power of the Holy Ghost, faith supernatural and divine, whereby we are enabled so to do, or rather whereby we do so. This work of the Spirit of God, as it is distinct from, so in order of nature it is antecedent unto all divine objective evidence of the Scriptures being the word of God, or the formal reason moving us to believe it; wherefore without it whatever arguments or motives are proposed unto us, we cannot believe the Scriptures to be the word of God in a due manner, and as it is in duty required of us.

Some, it may be, will suppose these things *απροσδιοντα* and impertinent unto our present purpose. For while we are enquiring on what grounds we believe the Scripture to be the word of God, we seem to fly to the work of the Holy Ghost in our own minds, which is irrational. But we must not be ashamed of the gospel, nor of the truth of it, because some do not understand, or will not duly consider what is proposed. It is necessary, that we should return unto the work of the Holy Spirit, not with peculiar respect unto the Scriptures that are to be believed, but unto our own minds, and that faith wherewith they are to be believed. For it is not the reason, why we believe the Scriptures, but the power whereby we are enabled so to do, which at present we enquire after.

1. That the faith whereby we believe the Scripture to be the word of God, is wrought in us by the Holy Ghost, can be denied only on two principles or suppositions. 1. That it is not faith divine and supernatural whereby we believe them so to be, but only we have other moral assurance thereof. 2. That this faith divine and supernatural is of ourselves, and is not wrought in us by the Holy Ghost. The first of these hath been already disproved, and shall be further evicted afterwards; and it may be they are very few who are of that judgment. For generally whatever men suppose the prime object, principal motive, and formal reason of that faith to be, yet that it is divine and supernatural they all acknowledge. And as to the second, what is so, it is of the operation of the Spirit of God. For to say it is divine and supernatural, is to say that it is not of ourselves, but that it is the grace and gift of the Spirit of God, wrought in us by his divine and supernatural power. And those of the church of Rome, who would resolve our faith in this matter objectively into the authority of their church, yet subjectively acknowledge the work of the Holy Spirit ingenerating faith in us, and that work to be necessary to our believing the Scripture in a due manner. *Externæ omnes & humanoæ persuasiones non sunt satis ad credendum, quantumcum ab hominibus competenter ea qua sunt fidei proponantur. Sed necessaria est insuper ea interior, hoc est divinum quoddam lumen incitans ad credendum, & oculi quidam interni Dei beneficio ad videndum dati,* saith Canus, Loc. Theol. lib. 2. cap. 8. Nor is there any of the divines of that church which dissent herein. We do not therefore assert any such divine formal reason of believing, as that the mind should not stand in need of supernatural assistance enabling it to assent thereunto. Nay we affirm that without this there is in no man any true faith at all, let the arguments and motives whereon he believes be as forcible and pregnant with evidence as can be imagined. It is in this case as in things natural; neither the light of the sun, nor any persuasive arguments unto

men to look up unto it, will enable them to discern it, unless they are endued with a due visive faculty.

And this the Scripture is express in beyond all possibility of contradiction. Neither is it that I know of, by any as yet in express terms denied. For indeed that all which is properly called faith with respect unto divine revelation, and is accepted with God as such, is the work of the Spirit of God in us, or is bestowed on us by him, cannot be questioned by any who own the gospel. I have also proved it elsewhere so fully and largely, as that I shall give it at present no other confirmation, but what will necessarily fall in with the description of the nature of that faith whereby we do believe, and the way or manner of its being wrought in us.

The work of the Holy Ghost unto this purpose consists in the saving illumination of the mind, and the effect of it as a supernatural light, whereby the mind is renewed, see Rom. xii. 1. Ephes. i. 18, 19. chap. iii. 16, 17, 18, 19. It is called an "heart to understand, eyes to see, ears to "hear," Deut. xxix. 4. "The opening of the eyes of our "understanding," Ephes. i. 18. "The giving of an un- "derstanding," 1 John v. 20. Hereby we are enabled to discern the evidences of the divine original and authority of the Scripture that are in itself, as well as afferent unto the truth contained in it; and without it we cannot do so. For the "natural man receives not the things of "the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness unto him, nei- "ther can he know them because they are spiritually dis- "cerned," 1 Cor. ii. 14. And unto this end it is written in the prophets, "that we shall be all taught of God," John vi. 45. That there is a divine and heavenly excellency in the Scripture, cannot be denied by any, who on any grounds or motives whatever do own its divine original. For all the works of God do set forth his praise, and it is impossible that any thing should proceed immediately from him, but that there will be express characters of divine excellencies upon it; and as to the communication

of these characters of himself, he hath magnified his word above all name. But these we cannot discern, be they in themselves never so illustrious, without the effectual communication of the light mentioned unto our minds; that is without divine supernatural illumination.

Herein he who commanded "light to shine out of darkness, shineth into our hearts the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ," 2 Cor. iv. 6. He irradiates the mind with a spiritual light, whereby it is enabled to discern the glory of spiritual things. This they cannot do in whom the "god of this world hath blinded the eyes of them that believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God should shine into them," ver. 6. Those who are under the power of their natural darkness and blindness, especially where there are in them also superadded prejudices begotten and increased by the craft of Satan, as there are in the whole world of unbelievers, cannot see nor discern that divine excellency in the Scripture, without an apprehension whereof no man can believe it aright to be the word of God. Such persons may assent unto the truth of the Scripture and its divine original, upon external arguments and rational motives; but believe it with faith divine and supernatural on those arguments and motives only, they cannot.

There are two things which hinder or disable men from believing with faith divine and supernatural, when any divine revelation is objectively proposed unto them. First, the natural blindness and darkness of their minds, which are come upon all by the fall, and the depravation of our nature that ensued thereon. Secondly, the prejudices that through the crafts of Satan the god of this world, their minds are possessed with, by traditions, educations, and converse in the world. This last obstruction or hindrance, may be so far removed by external arguments and motives of credibility, as that men may upon them attain unto a moral persuasion concerning the divine

original of the Scripture. But these arguments cannot remove or take away the native blindness of the mind, which is removed by their renovation and divine illumination alone. Wherefore none, I think, will positively affirm that we can believe the Scripture to be the word of God, in the way and manner which God requireth, without a supernatural work of the Holy Spirit upon our minds in the illumination of them; so David prays that "God would open his eyes, that he might behold wonderful things out of the law," Psal. cxix. 10. "That he would make him understand the way of his precepts," verse 27. That "he would give him understanding and he should keep the law," verse 34. So the Lord Christ also "opened the understandings of his disciples," that they might understand the Scriptures, Luke xxiv. 45. As he had affirmed before that it was given unto some to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God, and not unto others, Mat. xi. 25. chap. xiii. 11. And neither are these things spoken in vain, nor is the grace intended in them needless.

The communication of this light unto us the Scripture calleth revealing and revelation, Mat. xi. 25. "Thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes;" that is, given them to understand the mysteries of the kingdom of Heaven when they were preached unto them. "And no man knoweth the Father but he to whom the Son revealeth him," verse 27. So the apostle prayeth for the Ephesians, "that God would give them the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Christ, that the eyes of their understandings being enlightened, they might know," &c. chap. i. verse 17, 18, 19. It is true, these Ephesians were already believers, or considered by the apostle as such; but if he judged it necessary to pray for them, that they might have the spirit of wisdom and revelation to enlighten the eyes of their understanding, with respect unto further degrees of faith and knowledge; or as he speaks in another

place, "that they might come unto the full assurance of "understanding, to the acknowledgment of the mystery "of God," Col. ii. 2. then it is much more necessary to make them believers, who before were not so, but utter strangers unto the faith.

But as a pretence hereof hath been abused, as we shall see afterwards, so the pleading of it is liable to be mistaken. For some are ready to apprehend, that this retreat unto a spirit of revelation, is but a pretence to discard all rational arguments, and to introduce enthusiasm into their room. Now although the charge be grievous, yet because it is groundless, we must not forego what the Scripture plainly affirms and instructs us in, thereby to avoid it. Scripture testimonies may be expounded according to the analogy of faith, but denied or despised, seem they never so contrary unto our apprehension of things, they must not be. Some I confess, seem to disregard both the objective work of the Holy Spirit in this matter, whereof we shall treat afterwards, and his subjective work also in our minds, that all things may be reduced unto sense and reason. But we must grant that a spirit of wisdom and revelation to open the eyes of our understanding, is needful to enable us to believe the Scripture to be the word of God in a due manner, or forego the gospel. And our duty it is to pray continually for that spirit, if we intend to be established in the faith thereof.

But yet we plead not for external immediate revelations, such as were granted unto the prophets, apostles, and other penmen of the Scripture. The revelation we intend differs from them both in its especial subject and formal reason, or nature, that is in the whole kind. For 1. The subject matter of divine prophetical revelation, by a *θεοπνευστικη* or immediate divine inspiration, are things not made known before. Things they were, hid in God, or the counsels of his will, and revealed unto the apostles and prophets by the Spirit, Ephes. ii. 5, 9, 10. Whether they were doctrines or things, they were at least as unto their present

circumstances made known from the counsels of God by their revelation. But the matter and subject of the revelation we treat of, is nothing but what is already revealed. It is an internal revelation of that which is outwardly and antecedent unto it; beyond the bounds thereof it is not to be extended. And if any pretend unto immediate revelations of things not before revealed, we have no concernment in their pretences. 2. They differ likewise in their nature or kind. For immediate, divine, prophetical revelation consisted in an immediate inspiration, or afflatus, or in visions and voices from Heaven, with a power of the Holy Ghost transiently affecting their minds, guiding their tongues and hands to whom they were granted, whereby they received and represented divine impressions, as an instrument of music doth the skill of the hand whereby it is moved; the nature of which revelation I have more fully discoursed elsewhere. But this revelation of the Spirit consists in his effectual operation, freeing our minds from darkness, ignorance, and prejudice, enabling them to discern spiritual things in a due manner. And such a spirit of revelation is necessary unto them who would believe aright the Scripture, or any thing else that is divine and supernatural contained therein. And if men who through the power of temptations and prejudices are in the dark, or at a loss as to the great and fundamental principle of all religion, namely, the divine original and authority of the Scripture, will absolutely lean unto their own understandings, and have the whole difference determined by their natural power and faculties of their own souls, without seeking after divine aid and assistance, or earnest prayer for the spirit of wisdom and revelation to open the eyes of their understandings, they must be content to abide in the uncertainties, or to come off from them without any advantage to their souls. Not that I would deny unto men, or take them off from the use of their reason in this matter; for what is their reason given unto them for, unless it be to use it in those things which are of the greatest im-

portance unto them? Only I must crave leave to say, that it is not sufficient of itself to enable us to the performance of this duty, without the immediate aid and assistance of the Holy Spirit of God.

If any one upon these principles shall now ask us, wherefore we believe the Scripture to be the word of God? we do not answer, It is, because the Holy Ghost hath enlightened our minds, wrought faith in us, and enabled us to believe it. Without this we say indeed, did not the Spirit of God so work in us, and upon us, we neither should nor could believe with faith divine and supernatural. If God had not opened the heart of Lydia, she would not have attended unto the things preached by Paul so as to have received them, and without it the light oftentimes shines unto darkness, but the darkness comprehends it not. But this neither is nor can be the formal object of our faith, or the reason why we believe the Scripture to be of God, or any thing else; neither do we nor can we rationally answer by it unto this question, why we do believe. This reason must be something external and evidently proposed unto us. For whatever ability of spiritual assent there be in the understanding which is thus wrought in it by the Holy Ghost, yet the understanding cannot assent unto any thing with any kind of assent natural or supernatural, but what is outwardly proposed unto it as true, and that with sufficient reason that it is so. That therefore which proposeth any thing unto us as true, with evidence of that truth, is the formal object of our faith, or the reason why we do believe. And what is so proposed must be true, and must be evidenced to be true, or we cannot believe it; and according to the nature of that evidence such is our faith; human if that be human, and divine if that be so. Now nothing of this is done by that saving light which is infused into our minds, and is therefore not the reason why we believe what we do so.

Whereas therefore some who seem to conceive that the only general ground of believing the Scripture to be

the word of God, doth consist in rational arguments and motives of credibility, do grant that private persons may have their assurance hereof from the illumination of the Holy Ghost, though it be not pleadable to others; they grant what is not, that I know of, desired by any, and which in itself is not true. For this work consisting solely in enabling the mind unto that kind of assent which is faith divine and supernatural, on supposition of an external former reason of it duly proposed, is not the reason why any do believe, nor the ground wheresunto our faith is resolved.

It remains only that we enquire whether our faith in this matter be not resolved into an immediate internal testimony of the Holy Ghost, assuring us of the divine original and authority of the Scripture, distinct from the work of spiritual illumination, before described. For it is the common opinion of protestant divines, that the testimony of the Holy Ghost is the ground whereon we believe the Scriptures to be the word of God, and in what sense it is so shall be immediately declared. But hereon are they generally charged by those of the church of Rome and others, that they resolve all the ground and assurance of faith into their own particular spirits, or the spirit of every one that will pretend thereunto. And this is looked upon as a sufficient warranty to reproach them with giving countenance unto enthusiasm, and exposing the minds of men to endless delusions. Wherefore this matter must be a little further enquired into. And,

By an internal testimony of the Spirit, an extraordinary afflatus, or new immediate revelation may be intended. Men may suppose they have, or ought to have an internal particular testimony that the Scripture is the word of God, whereby, and whereby alone they may be infallibly assured that so it is. And this is supposed to be of the same nature with the revelation made unto the prophets and penmen of the Scripture; for it is neither an external proposition of truth, nor an internal ability to assent unto

such a proposition. And besides these there is no divine operation in this kind, but an immeditate prophetical inspiration or revelation. Wherefore as such a revelation or immediate testimony of the Spirit is the only reason why we do believe, so it is that alone which our faith rests on and is resolved into.

This is that which is commonly imputed to those who deny either the authority of the church, or any other external arguments or motives of credibility, to be the formal reason of our faith. Howbeit there is no one of them that I know of, who ever asserted any such thing. And I do therefore deny that our faith is resolved into any such private testimony, immediate revelation or inspiration of the Holy Ghost. And that for the ensuing reasons.

1. Since the finishing of the canon of the Scripture, the church is not under that conduct, as to stand in need of such new extraordinary revelations. It doth indeed live upon the internal gracious operations of the Spirit, enabling us to understand, believe, and obey the perfect complete revelation of the will of God already made, but new revelations it hath neither need nor use of. And to suppose them, or a necessity of them, not only overthrows the perfection of the Scripture, but also leaveth us uncertain whether we know all that is to be believed in order unto salvation, or our whole duty, or when we may do so. For it would be our duty to live all our days in expectation of new revelations, wherewith neither peace, assurance, or consolation are consistent.

2. Those who are to believe, will not be able on this supposition to secure themselves from delusion, and from being imposed on by the threats of Satan. For this new revelation is to be tried by the Scripture, or it is not. If it be to be tried and examined by the Scripture, then doth it acknowledge a superior rule, judgment, and testimony, and so cannot be that which our faith is ultimately resolved into. If it be exempted from that rule of trying the spirits, then, (1.) It must produce the grant of this exemp-

tion, seeing the rule is extended generally unto all things and doctrines that relate unto our faith or obedience. (2.) It must declare what are the grounds and evidences of its own *autorisatio*, or self-credibility, and how it may be infallibly or assuredly distinguished from all delusions, which can never be done. And if any tolerable countenance could be given unto these things, yet we shall shew immediately that no such private testimony, though real, can be the formal object of faith, or reason of believing.

3. It hath so fallen out in the providence of God, that generally all who have given up themselves in any things concerning faith or obedience unto the pretended conduct of immediate revelations, although they have a respect unto the Scripture also, have been seduced into opinions and practices directly repugnant unto it. And this with all persons of sobriety is sufficient to discard this pretence.

But this internal testimony of the Spirit is by others explained quite in another way. For they say, that besides the work of the Holy Ghost before insisted on, whereby he takes away our natural blindness, and enlightening our minds enables us to discern the divine excellencies that are in the Scripture; there is another internal efficiency of his, whereby we are moved, persuaded and enabled to believe: hereby we are taught of God, so as that finding the glory and majesty of God in the word, our hearts do, by an ineffable power, assent unto the truth, without any hesitation. And this work of the Spirit carrieth its own evidence in itself, producing an assurance above all human judgment, and such as stands in need of no further arguments or testimonies; this faith rests on and is resolved into: and this some learned men seem to embrace, because they suppose that the objective evidence which is given in the Scripture itself, is only moral, or such as can give only a moral assurance. Whereas therefore faith ought to be divine and supernatural, so must that be whereunto it is resolved, yea it is so alone from the formal reason of it.

And they can apprehend nothing in this work that is immediately divine, but only this internal testimony of the Spirit, wherein God himself speaks unto our hearts.

But yet neither, as it is so explained, can we allow it to be the formal object of faith, nor that wherein it doth acquiesce. For,

1. It hath not the proper nature of a divine testimony. A divine work it may be, but a divine testimony it is not; but it is of the nature of faith to be built on an external testimony. However therefore our minds may be established, and enabled to believe firmly and stedfastly, by an ineffable internal work of the Holy Ghost, whereof also we may have a certain experience; yet neither that work, nor the effect of it, can be the reason why we do believe, nor whereby we are moved to believe, but only that whereby we do believe.

2. That which is the formal object of faith, or reason whereon we believe, is the same, and common unto all that do believe. For our enquiry is not how, or by what means this or that man came to believe, but why any one or every one ought so to do, unto whom the Scripture is proposed. The object proposed unto all to be believed is the same; and the faith required of all in a way of duty is the same; or of the same kind and nature, and therefore the reason why we believe must be the same also. But on this supposition there must be as many distinct reasons of believing as there are believers.

3. On this supposition, it cannot be the duty of any one to believe the Scripture to be the word of God, who hath not received this internal testimony of the Spirit. For where the true formal reason of believing is not proposed unto us, there it is not our duty to believe. Wherefore, although the Scripture be proposed as the word of God, yet it is not our duty to believe it so to be, until we have this work of the Spirit in our hearts, in case that be the formal reason of believing. But not to press any further, how it is possible men may be deceived and deluded in

their apprehensions of such an internal testimony of the Spirit, especially if it be not to be tried by the Scripture; which if it be, it loseth its *autoritas* or self-credibility, or if it be it casteth us into a circle which the papists charge us withal; it cannot be admitted as the formal object of our faith, because it would divert us from that which is public, proper, every way certain and infallible.

However, that work of the Spirit which may be called an internal real testimony is to be granted, as that which belongs unto the stability and assurance of faith. For if he did no otherwise work in us, or upon us, but by the communication of spiritual light unto our minds, enabling us to discern the evidences that are in the Scripture of its own divine original, we should often be shaken in our absent, and moved from our stability. For whereas our spiritual darkness is removed but in part, and at best whilst we are here we see things but darkly, “as in a glass,” all things believed having some sort of inevidence or obscurity attending them; and whereas temptations will frequently shake and disturb the due respect of the faculty unto the object, or interpose mists and clouds between them, we can have no assurance in believing, unless our minds are further established by the Holy Ghost. He doth therefore three ways assist us in believing, and ascertain our minds of the things believed, so as that we may hold fast the beginning of our confidence firm and stedfast unto the end. For,

1. He gives unto believers a spiritual sense of the power and reality of the things believed, whereby their faith is greatly established. And although the divine witness, whereunto our faith is ultimately resolved, doth not consist herein, yet it is the greatest corroborating testimony whereof we are capable. This is that which brings us unto the “riches of the full assurance of understanding,” Col. ii. 2. as also, 1 Thess. i. 5. And on the account of this spiritual experience is our perception of spiritual things so often expressed by acts of sense, as tasting, seeing, feel-

ing, and the like means of assurance in things natural. And when believers have attained hereunto, they do find the divine wisdom, goodness, and authority of God so present unto them, as that they need neither argument nor motive, nor any thing else to persuade them unto, or confirm them in believing. And whereas this spiritual experience which believers obtain through the Holy Ghost, is such as cannot rationally be contended about, seeing those who have received it, cannot fully express it, and those who have not cannot understand it, nor the efficacy which it hath to secure and establish the mind ; it is left to be determined on by them alone, who have their senses exercised to discern good and evil. And this belongs unto the internal subjective testimony of the Holy Ghost.

2. He assists, helps, and relieves us against temptations to the contrary, so as that they shall not be prevalent. Our first prime assent unto the divine authority of the Scripture upon its proper grounds and reasons, will not secure us against future objections and temptations unto the contrary, from all manner of causes and occasions. David's faith was so assaulted by them, as that he said in his haste, " that all men were liars." And Abraham himself, after he had received the promise, that in his seed all nations should be blessed, was reduced unto that anxious enquiry, " Lord God what wilt thou give me, seeing I go childless?" Gen. xv. 2. And Peter was so winnowed by Satan, that although his faith failed not, yet he greatly failed and fainted in its exercise. And we all know what fears from within, what fightings from without we are exposed to in this matter. And of this sort are all those atheistical objections against the Scripture, which these days abound withal ; which the devil useth as fiery darts to enflame the souls of men, and to destroy their faith ; and indeed this is that work which the powers of hell are principally engaged in at this day. Having lopt off many branches, they now lay their ax to the root of faith, and thence in the midst of the profession of the Christian religion, there

is no greater controversy than whether the Scriptures are the word of God or not. Against all these temptations doth the Holy Ghost give in such a continual supply of spiritual strength and assistance unto believers, as that they shall at no time prevail, nor their faith totally fail. In such cases the Lord Christ intercedes for us, that our faith fail not, and God's grace is sufficient against the buffettings of these temptations. And herein the truth of Christ's intercession, with the grace of God, and its efficacy, are communicated unto us by the Holy Ghost. What are those internal aids whereby he establisheth and assureth our minds, against the force and prevalency of objections and temptations against the divine authority of the Scripture, how they are communicated us, and received by us, this is no place to declare in particular. It is in vain for any to pretend unto the name of Christians, by whom they are denied. And these also have the nature of an internal real testimony, whereby faith is established.

And because it is somewhat strange, that after a long quiet possession of the professed faith, and assent of the generality of the minds of men thereunto, there should now arise among us such an open opposition unto the divine authority of the Scriptures, as we find there is by experience; it may not be amiss in our passage to name the principal causes or occasions thereof: For if we should bring them all into one reckoning, as justly we may, who either openly oppose it and reject it, or who use it or neglect it at their pleasure, or who set up other guides in competition with it or above it, or otherwise declare that they have no sense of the immediate authority of God therein; we shall find them to be like the Moors or slaves in some countries or plantations, they are so great in number and force above their rulers and other inhabitants, that it is only want of communication with confidence, and some distinct interests, that keep them from casting off their yoke and restraint. I shall name three causes only of this surprising and perilous event.

1. A long continued outward profession of the truth of the Scripture, without an inward experience of its power, betrays men at length to question the truth itself, at least not to regard it as divine. The owning of the Scriptures to be the word of God bespeaks a divine majesty, authority and power, to be present in it and with it. Wherefore after men, who have for a long time so professed, do find that they never had any real experience of such a divine presence in it by any effects upon their own minds, they grow insensibly regardless of it, or to allow it a very common place in their thoughts. When they have worn off the impressions that were on their mind from tradition, education and custom, they do for the future rather not oppose it than in any way believe it. And when once a reverence unto the word of God on the account of its authority is lost, an assent unto it on the account of truth will not long abide. And all such persons, under a concurrence of temptations and outward occasions, will either reject it, or prefer other guides before it.

2. The power of lust rising up into a resolution of living in those sins, whereunto the Scripture doth unavoidably annex eternal ruin, hath prevailed with many to cast off its authority. For whilst they are resolved to live in an outrage of sin; to allow a divine truth and power in the Scripture is to cast themselves under a present torment, as well as to ascertain their future misery: for no other can be his condition, who is perpetually sensible that God always condemns him in all that he doth, and will assuredly take vengeance of him, which is the constant language of the Scripture concerning such persons. Wherefore although they will not immediately fall into an open atheistical opposition unto it, as that which it may be is not consistent with their interest and reputation in the world, yet looking upon it as the devils did on Jesus Christ, as that which "comes to torment them before their time," they keep it at the greatest distance from their thoughts and minds, until they have habituated themselves unto a con-

tempt of it. There being therefore an utter impossibility of giving any pretence of reconciliation between the owning of the Scriptures to be the word of God, and a resolution to live in an excess of known sin; multitudes suffer their minds to be bribed by their corrupt affections to a relinquishment of any regard unto it.

3. The scandalous quarrels, and disputationes of those of the church of Rome against the Scripture and its authority, have contributed much unto the ruin of the faith of many. Their great design is by all means to secure the power, authority and infallibility of their church. Of these they say continually, as the apostle in another case of the mariners, “unless these stay in the ship we cannot be saved;” without an acknowledgement of these things they would have it, that men can neither at present believe, nor be saved hereafter. To secure this interest, the authority of the Scripture must be by all means questioned and impaired. A divine authority in itself they will allow it, but with respect unto us it hath none but what it obtains by the suffrage and testimony of their church. But whereas authority is *en των τριών*, and consists essentially in the relation and respect which it hath unto others, or those that are to be subject unto it; to say that it hath an authority in itself, but none towards us, is not only to deny that it hath any authority at all, but also to reproach it with an empty name. They deal with it as the soldiers did with Christ, “They put a crown on his head, and cloathed him with a purple robe, and bowing the knee before him mocked him, saying, Hail king of the Jews.” They ascribe unto it the crown and robe of divine authority in itself, but not towards any one person in the world. So, if they please, God shall be God, and his word be of some credit among men. Herein they seek continually to entangle those of the weaker sort, by urging them vehemently with this question, How do you know the Scripture to be the word of God? and have in continual readiness a number of sophistical artifices to weaken all evidences that shall

be pleaded in its behalf. Nor is that all; but on all occasions they insinuate such objections against it from its obscurity, imperfection, want of order, difficulties, and seeming contradictions in it, as are suited to take off the minds of men from a firm assent unto it, or reliance on it. As if a company of men should conspire by crafty multiplied insinuations, divulged on all advantages, to weaken the reputation of a chaste and sober matron; although they cannot deprive her of her virtue; yet unless the world were wiser than for the most part it appears to be, they will insensibly take off from her due esteem. And this is as bold an attempt as can well be made in any case. For the first tendency of these courses is to make men atheists, after which success it is left at uncertain hazard whether they will be papists or no. Wherefore as there can be no greater nor more dishonourable reflection made on Christian religion, than that it hath no other evidence or testimony of its truth, but the authority and witness of those by whom it is at present professed, and who have notable wordly advantages thereby; so the minds of multitudes are secretly influenced by the poison of these disputes, to think it no way necessary to believe the Scripture to be the word of God; or at least are shaken off from the grounds whereon they have professed it so to be. And the like disservice is done unto faith and the souls of men, by such as advance a light within, or immediate inspiration into competition with it, or the room of it. For as such imaginations take place and prevail in the minds of men, so their respect unto the Scripture, and all sense of its divine authority doth decay, as experience doth openly manifest.

It is, I say, from an unusual concurrence of these and the like causes and occasions, that there is at present among us such a decay in, relinquishment of, and opposition unto the belief of the Scripture, as it may be former ages could not parallel.

But against all these objections and temptations, the

minds of true believers are secured by supplies of spiritual light, wisdom, and grace from the Holy Ghost.

There are several other especial gracious actings of the Holy Spirit on the minds of believers, which belong also unto this internal real testimony, whereby their faith is established. Such are his anointing and sealing of them, his witnessing with them, and his being an earnest in them, all which must be elsewhere spoken unto. Hereby is our faith every day more and more increased and established. Wherefore although no internal work of the Spirit can be the formal reason of our faith, or that which it is resolved into; yet is it such, as without it we can never sincerely believe as we ought, nor be established in believing against temptations and objections.

And with respect unto this work of the Holy Ghost it is, that divines at the first reformation did generally resolve our faith of the divine authority of the Scripture into the testimony of the Holy Spirit. But this they did not do exclusively unto the proper use of external arguments and motives of credibility, whose store indeed is great, and whose fountain is inexhaustible. For they arise from all the undubitable notions that we have of God or ourselves, in reference unto our present duty or future happiness. Much less did they exclude that evidence thereof which the Holy Ghost gives unto it in and by itself. Their judgment is well expressed in the excellent words of one of them. *Maneat ergo (saith he) hoc fixum, quos spiritus intus docuit solide acquiescere in Scriptura, & hanc quidem esse autoritatem, neque demonstrationi & rationibus subjici eam fas esse; quam tamen meretur apud nos certitudinem spiritus testimoniis consequi; et si enim reverentiam sua sibi ultra maiestate conciliat, tunc tamen demum serio nos afficit, quem per spiritum obsignata est cordibus nostris.* *Istius ergo veritate illuminati, jam non aut nostro, aut aliorum iudicio credimus a Deo esse Scripturam; sed supra humanum iudicium certo certius constituimus, non secus ac si ipsis Dei numen illic intucremur hominum ministerio, ab ipissimo Dei ore ad nos fluxisse.* Non ar-

gumenta, non veri similitudines quaerimus, quibus judicium nostrum incumbat, sed ut rei extra estimandi aleam posita judicium ingeniumq; nostrum subjicimus. Non qualiter superstitionibus solent miseri homines captivam mentem addicere; sed quia non dubiam vim numinis illic sentimus vigere & spirare, quam ad parendum scientes ac volentes, vividius tamen & efficacius quam pro humana aut voluntate aut scientia trahimur & accendimur. Talis ergo est persuasio quæ rationes non requirat, talis notitia cui optima ratio constet, nempe, in qua securius constantiusq; mens quiescat, quam in ulla rationibus; talis deniq; sensus, qui nisi ex cœlesti revelatione nequeat. Non aliud loquor quam quod apud se experitur fidelium unusquisq; nisi quod longe infra justam rei explicationem verba subsidunt. Calv. Instit. lib. 2. cap. 7, 8, 9.

And we may here briefly call over what we have attained or passed through. For, 1. We have shewed in general both what is the nature of divine revelation, and divine illumination, with their mutual respect unto one another. 2. What are the principal external arguments or motives of credibility, whereby the Scripture may be proved to be of a divine original. 3. What kind of persuasion is the effect of them, or what is the assent which we give unto the truth of the Scriptures on their account. 4. What objective evidence there is unto reason in the doctrine of the Scriptures, to induce the mind to assent unto them. 5. What is the nature of that faith whereby we believe the Scripture to be the word of God, and how it is wrought in us by the Holy Ghost. 6. What is that internal testimony which is given unto the divine authority of the Scriptures by the Holy Spirit, what is the force and use thereof. The principal part of our work doth yet remain.

CHAP. V.

Divine Revelation itself the only foundation and Reason of Faith.

THAT which we have thus far made way for, and which is now our only remaining enquiry, is, What is the work of the Holy Ghost with respect unto the objective evidence which we have concerning the Scripture, that is the word of God, which is the formal reason of our faith, and whereinto it is resolved, that is, we come to enquire and to give a direct answer unto that question, Why we believe the Scripture to be the word of God? what it is that our faith rests upon herein? and what it is that makes it the duty of every man to believe it so to be, unto whom it is proposed. And the reason why I shall be the briefer herein is, because I have long since in another discourse cleared this argument, and I shall not here again call over any thing that was delivered therein, because what hath been unto this day gainsaid unto it, or excepted against it, hath been of little weight or consideration. Unto this great enquiry therefore I say,

We believe the Scripture to be the word of God with divine faith for its own sake only; or our faith is resolved into the authority and truth of God only, as revealing himself unto us therein and thereby. And this authority and veracity of God do infallibly manifest or evince themselves unto our faith, or our minds in the exercise of it, by the revelation itself in the Scripture, and no otherwise, or, thus faith the Lord, is the reason why we ought to believe, and why we do so; why we believe at all in general, and why we believe any thing in particular. And this we call the formal object or reason of faith.

And it is evident that this is not God himself absolutely considered; for so he is only the material object of our faith; "he that cometh unto God must believe that he is,"

Heb xi. 6. Nor is it the truth of God absolutely, for that we believe as we do other essential properties of his nature: But it is the truth of God revealing himself, his mind and will unto us in the Scripture. This is the sole reason why we believe any thing with divine faith.

It is, or may be enquired, wherefore we do believe Jesus Christ to be the Son of God, or that God is one in nature, subsisting in three persons, the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit? I answer, it is, because God himself, the first truth, who cannot lie, hath revealed and declared these things so to be, and he who is our all, requireth us so to believe. If it be asked how, wherein, or whereby God hath revealed or declared these things so to be, or what is that revelation which God hath made hereof? I answer, it is the Scripture, and that only. And if it be asked, how I know this Scripture to be a divine revelation, to be the word of God? I answer, 1. I do not know it demonstratively, upon rational scientifical principles, because such a divine revelation is not capable of such a demonstration, 1 Cor. ii. 9. 2. I do not assent unto it, or think it to be so upon arguments and motives highly probable, or morally uncontroulable only, as I am assuredly persuaded of many other things whereof I can have no certain demonstration, 1 Thes. ii. 15. But I believe it so to be with faith divine and supernatural, resting on, and resolved into the authority and veracity of God himself, evidencing themselves unto my mind, my soul and conscience by this revelation itself, and not otherwise.

Here we rest, and deny that we believe the Scripture to be the word of God formally for any other reason but itself, which assureth us of its divine authority. And if we rest not here, we must run on the rock of a moral certainty only; which shakes the foundation of all divine faith, or fall into the gulph and labyrinth of an endless circle, in proving two things mutually by one another, as the church by the Scripture, and the Scripture by the church in an everlasting rotation. Unless we intend so to wander we

must come to something wherein we may rest for its own sake, and that not with a strong and firm opinion, but with divine faith. And nothing can rationally pretend unto this privilege, but the truth of God manifesting itself in the Scripture. And therefore those, who will not allow it hereunto, do some of them wisely deny that the Scriptures being the word of God is the object of divine faith directly, but only of a moral persuasion from eternal arguments and considerations. And I do believe that they will grant, that if the Scripture be so to be believed, it must be for its own sake. For those who would have us to believe the Scripture to be the word of God upon the authority of the church, proposing it unto us, and witnessing so to be, though they make a fair appearance of a ready and easy way for the exercise of faith, yet when things come to be sifted and tried, they do so confound all sorts of things, that they know not where to stand or abide. But it is not now my business to examine their pretences, I have done it elsewhere. I shall therefore prove and establish the assertion laid down, after I have made way to it by one or two previous observations.

I. We suppose herein all the motives of credibility before mentioned, that is, all the arguments *ab extra*, which vehemently persuade the Scripture to be the word of God, and wherewith it may be protected against objections and temptations to the contrary. They have all of them their use, and may in their proper place be insisted on. Especially ought they to be pleaded when the Scripture is attacked by an atheism, arising from the love and practice of those lusts and sins which are severely condemned therein, and threatened with the utmost vengeance. With others they may be considered as previous inducements unto believing, or concomitant means of strengthening faith in them that do believe. In the first way, I confess, to the best of my observation of things past and present, their use is not great, nor ever hath been in the church of God. For assuredly the most that do sincerely believe the divine

original and authority of the Scripture, do it without any great consideration of them, or being much influenced by them. And there are many who, as Austin speaks, are saved *simplicitate credendi*, and not *subtilitate disputandi*, that are not able to enquire much into them, nor yet to apprehend much of their force and efficacy, when they are proposed unto them. Most persons therefore are effectually converted to God, and have saving faith whereby they believe the Scripture, and virtually all that is contained in it, before they have ever once considered them. And God forbid we should think that none believe the Scripture aright, but those who are able to apprehend and manage the subtle arguments of learned men produced in their confirmation. Yea we affirm on the contrary, that those who believe them on no other grounds have indeed no true divine faith at all. Hence they were not of old insisted on for the ingenerating of faith in them to whom the word was preached, nor ordinarily are so to this day by any who understand what is their work and duty. But in the second way, wherever there is occasion from objections, oppositions, or temptations, they may be pleaded to good use and purpose. And they may do well to be furnished with them, who are unavoidably exposed unto trials of that nature. For as for that course which some take in all places and at all times to be disputing about the Scriptures, and their authority; it is a practice giving countenance unto atheism, and is to be abhorred of all that fear God, and the consequents of it are sufficiently manifest.

2. The ministry of the church, as it is the ground and pillar of truth, holding it up and declaring it, is in an ordinary way previously necessary unto believing. For faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. We believe the Scripture to be the word of God for itself alone, but not by itself alone. The ministry of the word, is the means which God hath appointed, for the declaration and making known the testimony which the Holy Spirit gives in the Scripture unto its divine original. And this

is the ordinary way whereby men are brought to believe the Scripture to be the word of God. The church in its ministry, owning, witnessing, and avowing it so to be, instructing all sorts of persons out of it, there is together with a sense and apprehension of the truth and power of the things taught and revealed in it, faith in itself as the word of God, ingenerated in them.

3. We do also here suppose the internal effectual work of the Spirit begetting faith in us as was before declared; without which we can believe neither the Scripture nor any thing else with faith divine, not for want of evidence in them, but of faith in ourselves.

These things being supposed, we do affirm, that it is the authority and truth of God, as manifesting themselves in the supernatural revelation made in the Scripture, that our faith ariseth from and is resolved into. And herein consists that testimony which the Spirit gives unto the word of God that it is so; for it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth. The Holy Ghost being the immediate author of the whole Scripture doth therein and thereby give testimony unto the divine truth and original of it, by the characters of divine authority and veracity impressed on it, and evidencing themselves in its power and efficacy. And let it be observed, that what we assert respects the revelation itself, the Scripture, the writing, *τον γραπτον*, and not merely the things written or contained in it. The arguments produced by some to prove the truth of the doctrines of the Scripture, reach not the cause in hand. For our enquiry is not about believing the truths revealed, but about believing the revelation itself, the Scripture itself to be divine. And this we do only because of the authority and veracity of the revealer, that is of God himself, manifesting themselves therein.

To manifest this fully, I shall do these things.

1. Prove that our faith is so resolved into the Scripture as a divine revelation, and not into any thing else, that is we believe the Scripture to be the word of God for its own

fake, and not for the sake of any thing else, either external arguments, or authoritative testimony of men whatever.

2. Shew how or by what means the Scripture doth evidence its own divine original, or the authority of God is so evidenced in it and by it, as that we need no other formal cause or reason of our faith, whatever motives or means of believing we may make use of. And as to the first of these,

1. That is the formal reason whereon we do believe, which the Scripture proposeth as the only reason why we should so do, why it is our duty to do so, and whereunto it requireth our assent. Now this is to itself as it is the word of God, and because it is so. Or it proposeth the authority of God in itself, and that alone, which we are to acquiesce in, and the truth of God and that alone which our faith is to rest on, and is resolved into. It doth not require us to believe it upon the testimony of any church, or on any other arguments that it gives us to prove that it is from God; but speaks unto us immediately in his name, and thereon requires faith and obedience.

Some it may be, will ask, Whether this prove the Scripture to be the word of God, because it says so of itself, when any other writing may say the same? But we are not now giving arguments to prove unto others the Scripture to be the word of God, but only proving and shewing what our own faith resteth on, and is resolved into, or at least ought so to be. How it evidenceth itself unto our faith to be the word of God we shall afterwards declare. It is sufficient unto our present purpose, that God requires us to believe the Scripture for no other reason but because it is his word, or a divine revelation from him; and if so, his authority and truth are the formal reason why we believe the Scripture or any thing contained in it. To this purpose do testimonies abound in particular, besides that general attestation which is given unto it in that sole preface of divine revelations, "Thus saith the Lord;" and therefore they are to be believed. Some of them we must mention.

Deut. xxxi. 11, 12, 13. "When all Israel is come to appear before the Lord thy God in the place which he shall chuse, thou shalt read this law before all Israel in their hearing; gather the people together, men, women, and children, and the stranger that is within thy gates, that they may hear, and that they may learn, and fear the Lord your God, and observe to do all the works of this law, and that their children which have not known any thing may hear and learn to fear the Lord your God." It is plain that God here requireth faith and obedience of the whole people, men, women, and children. The enquiry is what he requireth it unto? It is to this law, to this law written in the books of Moses, which was to be read unto them out of the book, at the hearing of which they were obliged to believe and obey. To evidence that law to be his, he proposeth nothing but itself. But it will be said, that generation was sufficiently convinced that the law was from God, by the miracles which they beheld in the giving of it. But moreover it is ordered to be proposed unto children of future generations, who knew nothing, that they may hear and learn to fear the Lord.

That which by the appointment of God is to be proposed unto them that know nothing that they may believe, that is unto them the formal reason of their believing. But this is the written word, "Thou shalt read this law unto them who have known nothing, that they may hear and learn, &c." Whatever use therefore there may be of other motives or testimonies to commend the law unto us, of the ministry of the church especially, which is here required unto the proposal of the word unto men, it is the law itself, or the written word which is the object of our faith, and which we believe for its own sake; see also chap. xxix. 29. where revealed things are said "to belong unto us and our children that we might do them," that is receive them on the account of their divine revelation.

Is. viii. 19, 20. "And when they shall say unto you, seek unto them that have familiar spirits, and unto wiz-

"ards, that peep and mutter; should not a people seek unto
"their God? for the living to the dead? to the law, and
"to the testimony; if they speak not according to this
"word, it is because there is no light in them." The en-
quiry is by what means men may come to satisfaction in
their minds and consciences, or what their faith and trust
is in. Two things are proposed unto this end. 1. Im-
mediate diabolical revelations, real or pretended. 2. The
written word of God, the law and the testimony. Here-
unto are we sent, and that upon the account of its own
authority alone, in opposition unto all other pretences of
assurance or security. And the sole reason why any one
doth not acquiesce by faith in the written word, is because
he hath no mornings, or light of truth shining on him.
But how shall we know the law and testimony, this written
word, to be the word of God, and believe it so to be, and
distinguish it from every other pretended divine revelation,
that is not so? This is declared;

Jerem. xxiii. 28, 29. "The prophet that hath a dream,
"let him tell a dream; and he that hath my word, let him
"speak my word faithfully. What is the chaff to the
"wheat, saith the Lord? Is not my word like as fire, saith
"the Lord? and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in
"pieces?" It is supposed that there are two persons in re-
putation for divine revelations esteemed prophets; one of
them only pretends so to be, and declares the dreams of
his own fancy, or the divinations of his own mind, as the
word of God. The other hath the word of God and de-
clares it faithfully from him. Yea but how shall we
know the one from the other? even as men know wheat
from chaff, by their different natures and effects. For as
false pretended revelations are but as chaff which every
wind will scatter; so the true word of God is like a fire, and
like an hammer, is accompanied with that light, efficacy
and power, that it manifests itself unto the consciences of
men so to be. Hereon doth God call us to rest our faith
on it in opposition unto all other pretences whatever.

But is it of this authority and efficacy in itself? see Luke xvi. 27, 28, 29, 30, 31. "Then said he, (the rich man in hell) I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him (Lazurus who was dead,) unto my father's house, for I have five brethren, that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, they have Moses and the prophets, let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham, but if one went unto them from the dead they would repent; and he said unto him, if they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead." The question here between Abraham and the rich man in this parable, indeed between the wisdom of God and the superstitious contrivances of men is about the way and means of bringing those who are unbelievers and impenitent, unto faith and repentance. He who was in hell apprehended that nothing would make them believe but a miracle, one rising from the dead and speaking unto them; which, or the like marvellous operations, many at this day think would have mighty power and influence upon them to settle their minds and change their lives; should they see one "rise from the dead," and come and converse with them, this would convince them of the immortality of the soul, of future rewards and punishments, as giving them sufficient evidence thereof, so that they would assuredly repent and change their lives; but as things are stated, they have no sufficient evidence of these things, so that they doubt so far about them, as that they are not really influenced by them; give them but one real miracle, and you shall have them for ever. This I say, was the opinion and judgment of him who was represented in hell, as it is of many who are posting thither apace. He who was in heaven thought otherwise, wherein we have the immediate judgment of Jesus Christ given in this matter, determining this controversy. The question is about sufficient evidence and efficacy, to cause us to believe things divine and su-

pernaturall; and this he determines to be in the written word, " Moses and the prophets." If he that will not believe on the single evidence of the written word to be from God, or a divine revelation of his will, will never believe upon the evidence of miracles, nor any other motives, then that written word contains in itself the entire formal reason of faith, or all that evidence of the authority and truth of God in it, which faith divine and supernatural rests upon; that is, it is to be believed for its own sake. But saith our Lord Jesus Christ himself, " If men will not hear," that is, believe " Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead," and come and preach unto them, a greater miracle than which they could not desire. Now this could not be spoken, if the Scripture did not contain in itself the whole entire formal reason of believing; for if it have not this, something necessary unto believing would be wanting, though that were enjoyed. And this is directly affirmed,

John xx. 30, 31. " And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book. But these are written, that you might believe that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God, and that believing you might have life through his name." The signs which Christ wrought did evidence him to be the Son of God. But how come we to know and believe these signs? what is the way and means thereof? Saith the blessed apostle, " these things are written that you may believe;" this writing of them by divine inspiration, is so far sufficient to beget and assure faith in you, as that thereby you may have eternal life through Jesus Christ. For if the writing of divine things and revelations be the means appointed of God to cause men to believe unto eternal life, then it must as such carry along with it sufficient reason why we should believe, and grounds whereon we should do so. And in like manner is this matter determined by the apostle Peter,

2 Pet. i. 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21. " For we have not fol-

" lowed cunningly devised fables, when we made known
" unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus
" Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his majesty. For he
" received from God the Father honour and glory, when
" there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory;
" This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.
" And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when
" we were with him in the holy mount. We have also a
" more sure word of prophecy, whereunto ye do well that
" ye take heed, as unto a light shining in a dark place,
" until the day dawn, and the day-star arise in your hearts.
" Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the Scripture is
" of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came
" not in old time by the will of man; but holy men of
" God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost."

The question is about the gospel, or the declaration of the powerful coming of Jesus Christ, whether it were to be believed or no? and if it were, upon what grounds? Some said it was a "cunningly devised fable;" others, that it was a fanatical story of madmen, as Festus thought of it when preached by Paul, Acts xxvi. 24 and very many are of the same mind still. The apostles on the contrary averred, that what was spoken concerning him were "words of truth and soberness," yea "faithful sayings, and worthy of all acceptance," 1 Tim. i. 15. that is, to be believed for its worth and truth. The grounds and reasons hereof are two. (1.) The testimony of the apostles, who not only conversed with Jesus Christ, and were eye witnesses of his majesty, beholding his glory, "the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth," John i. 14. which they gave in evidence of the truth of the gospel, i. John i. 1. but also heard a miraculous testimony given unto him immediately from God in heaven, verse 17, 18. This gave them indeed sufficient assurance; but whereinto shall they resolve their faith who heard not this testimony? Why they have "a more sure," that is, a *myst* "sure word of prophecy," that is, the writ-

ten word of God, that is sufficient of itself to secure their faith in this matter, especially as confirmed by the testimony of the apostles, whereby the church comes to be built in its faith on the “ foundation of the prophets and “ apostles,” Eph. ii. 20. But why should we believe this word of prophecy? may not that also be a cunningly devised fable, and the whole Scripture be but the suggestions of men’s private spirits, as is objected? ver. 20. All is finally resolved into this, that the writers of it were “ im-“ mediately moved and acted by the Holy Ghost,” from which divine original it carrieth along its own evidence with it. Plainly that which the apostle teacheth us is, that we believe all other divine truths for the Scripture’s sake, or because they are declared therein; but the Scripture we believe for its own sake, or because holy men of God wrote it as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

So is the whole object of faith propounded by the same apostle, 2 Pet. iii. 2. “ The words that were spoken before “ by the holy prophets, and the commandments of the “ apostles of the Lord and Saviour.” And because our faith is resolved into them, we are said to be built upon the foundation of the prophets and apostles, as was said Eph. ii. 20. that is, our faith rests solely, as on its proper foundation which bears the weight of it, on the authority and truth of God in their writings. Hereunto we may add that of Paul.

Rom. xvi. 25, 26. “ According to the revelation of the “ mystery which was kept secret since the world began, “ but now is made manifest, and by the Scriptures of the “ prophets, according to the commandment of the ever-“ lasting God, made known unto all nations for the obe-“ dience of faith.” The matter to be believed is the mystery of the gospel, which was kept secret since the world began, or from the giving of the first promise, not absolutely, but with respect unto that full manifestation which it hath now received. This God commands to be believed, the everlasting God, he who hath sovereign authority over

all, requires faith in a way of obedience hereunto.' But what ground or reason have we to believe it? This alone is proposed; namely, the divine revelation made in the preaching of the apostles, and writings of the prophets; for "faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God" Rom. x. 17. This course and no other did our Saviour, even after his resurrection, take to beget and confirm faith in the disciples, Luke xxiv. 25, 26, 27. That great testimony to this purpose; 2 Tim. iii. 14, 15, 16, 17. I do not plead in particular, because I have so fully insisted on it in another discourse.

From these and many other testimonies to the same purpose, which might be produced, it is evident,

1. That it is the Scripture itself, the word or will of God as revealed or written, which is proposed unto us as the object of our faith and obedience, which we are to receive and believe with faith divine and supernatural.

2. That no other reason is proposed unto us either as a motive to encourage us, or as an argument to assure us that we shall not be mistaken; but only its own divine original and authority, making our duty necessary, and securing our faith infallibly. And those testimonies are with me of more weight a thousand times than the plausible reasonings of any to the contrary. With some indeed it is grown a matter of contempt to quote or cite the Scripture in our writings, such reverence have they for the ancient fathers, some of whose writings are nothing else but a perpetual contexture of Scripture. But for such who pretend to despise those testimonies in this case, it is because either they do not understand what they are produced to confirm, or cannot answer the proof that is in them. For it is not unlikely but that some persons well conceited of their own understanding in things wherein they are most ignorant, will pride and please themselves in the ridiculousness of proving the Scripture to be the word of God by testimonies taken out of it.' But as was said, we

must not forego the truth because either they will not or cannot understand what we discourse about,

2. Our assertion is confirmed by the uniform practice of the prophets and apostles, and all the penmen of the Scripture, in proposing these divine revelations which they received by immediate inspiration from God. For that which was the reason of their faith unto whom they first declared those divine revelations, is the reason of our faith now they are recorded in the Scripture. For the writing of it being by God's appointment, it comes into the room and supplies the place of their oral ministry. On what ground soever men were obliged to receive and believe divine revelations, when made unto them by the prophets and apostles, on the same are we obliged to receive and believe them, now they are made unto us in the Scripture, the writing being by divine inspiration, and appointed as the means and cause of our faith. It is true, God was pleased sometimes to bear witness unto their personal ministry by miracles, or signs and wonders, as Heb. ii. 4. "God bearing them witness." But this was only at some seasons, and with some of them. That which they universally insisted on, whether they wrought any miracles or no, was, that the word which they preached, declared, wrote, was not the word of man, came not by any private suggestion, or from any invention of their own, but was indeed the word of God, 1 Thes. ii. 13 and declared by them as they were actuated by the Holy Ghost. 2 Pet. i. 21.

Under the Old Testament, although the prophets sometimes referred persons unto the word already written, as that which their faith was to acquiesce in, Isa. viii. 20. Mal. iv. 4. setting out its power and excellency for all the ends of faith and obedience, Psal. xix. 7, 8, 9. Psal. cxix. and not to any thing else, nor to any other motives or arguments to beget and require faith, but its own authority only; yet as to their own especial messages and revelations, they laid the foundation of all the faith and obedience which they required, in this alone, "Thus saith the Lord,

"the God of truth." And under the New Testament, the infallible preachers and writers thereof do in the first place propose the writings of the Old Testament to be received for their own sake, or on the account of their divine original; see John i. 45, 46, 47. Luke xvi. 29, 31. Mat. xxi. 42. Acts xviii. 24, 25, 28. Acts xxiv. 14. chap. xxvi. 22. 2 Pet. i. 21. Hence are they called the oracles of God, Rom. iii. 2. And oracles always required an assent for their own sakes, and other evidence they pleaded none. And for the revelations which they superadded, they pleaded that they had them "immediately from God by Jesus Christ," Gal. i. 1. And this was accompanied with such an infallible assurance in them that received it, as to be preferred above a supposition of the highest miracle to confirm any thing to the contrary; Gal. i. 8. For if an angel from heaven should have preached any other doctrine than what they revealed and proposed in the name and authority of God, they were to esteem him accursed. For this cause they still insisted on their apostolical authority and mission, which included infallible inspiration and directions as the reason of the faith of them unto whom they preached and wrote. And as for those who were not themselves divinely inspired, or wherein those that were so did not act by immediate inspiration, they proved the truth of what they delivered by its consonancy unto the Scriptures already written, referring the minds and consciences of men unto them for their ultimate satisfaction; Acts xviii. 23. chap. xxviii. 33.

3 It was before granted, that there is required as subservient unto believing, as a means of it, or the resolution of our faith into the authority of God in the Scriptures, the ministerial proposal of the Scriptures and the truths contained in them, with the command of God for obedience unto them, Rom. xvi. 25, 26. This ministry of the church, either extraordinary or ordinary, God hath appointed unto this end, and ordinarily it is indispensable thereto, Rom. x. 14, 15. "How shall they believe in

"him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher, and how shall they preach unless they are sent?" Without this ordinarily we cannot believe the Scripture to be the word of God, nor the things contained in it to be from him, though we do not believe either the one or the other for it. I do grant that in extraordinary cases outward providences may supply the room of this ministerial proposal; for it is all one as unto our duty by what means the Scripture is brought unto us. But upon a supposition of this ministerial proposal of the word, which ordinarily includes the whole duty of the church in its testimony and declaration of the truth, I desire to know whether those unto whom it is proposed, are obliged, without further external evidence, to receive it as the word of God, to rest their faith in it, and submit their consciences unto it? The rule seems plain, that they are obliged so to do, Mark xvi. 16. We may consider this under the distinct ways of its proposal extraordinary, and ordinary.

Upon the preaching of any of the prophets by immediate inspiration of the Holy Ghost, or on their declaration of any new revelation they had from God, by preaching or writing, suppose Isaiah or Jeremiah, I desire to know whether or no all persons were bound to receive their doctrine as from God to believe and submit unto the authority of God in the revelation made by him, without any external motives or arguments, or the testimony or authority of the church witnessing thereunto? If they were not, then were they all excused as guiltless, who refused to believe the message they declared in the name of God, and in despising the warnings and instructions which they gave them. For external motives they used not, and the present church mostly condemned them and their ministry; as is plain, and the case of Jeremiah. Now it is impious to imagine that those to whom they spake in the name of God were not obliged to believe them, and it tends to the overthrow of all religion. If we shall say that they were o-

bliged to believe them, and that under the penalty of divine displeasure, and so to receive the revelation made by them, or their declaration of it, as the word of God; then it must contain in it the formal reason of believing, or the full and entire cause. Reason and ground why they ought to believe with faith divine and supernatural. Or let another ground of faith in this case be assigned.

Suppose the proposal be made in the ordinary ministry of the church. Hereby the Scripture is declared unto men to be the word of God; they are acquainted with it, and what God requires of them therein, and they are charged in the name of God to receive and believe it. Doth any obligation unto believing hence arise? It may be some will say that immediately there is not; only they will grant that men are bound hereon to enquire into such reasons and motives, as are proposed unto them for its reception and admission. I say, there is no doubt but that men are obliged to consider all things of that nature which are proposed unto them, and not to receive it with brutish implicit belief. For the receiving of it is to be an act of men's own minds or understandings, on the best grounds and evidences which the nature of the thing proposed is capable of. But supposing men to do their duty in their diligent enquiries into the whole matter, I desire to know, whether by the proposal mentioned there come upon men an obligation to believe? If there do not, then are all men perfectly innocent, who refuse to receive the gospel in the preaching of it, as to any respect unto that preaching; which to say, is to overthrow the whole dispensation of the ministry. If they are obliged to believe upon the preaching of it, then hath the word in itself those evidences of its divine original and authority, which are a sufficient ground of faith, or reason of believing; for what God requires us to believe upon, hath so always.

As the issue of this whole discourse, it is affirmed, that our faith is built on and resolved into the Scripture itself, which carries with it its own evidence of being a divine re-

velation. And therefore doth that faith ultimately rest in the truth and authority of God alone, and not in any human testimony, such as is that of the church, nor in any rational arguments or motives that are absolutely fallible.

CHAP. VI.

The Nature of Divine Revelations. Their self evidencing power considered: particularly that of the Scriptures as the Word of God.

IT may be said that if the Scripture thus evidence itself to be the word of God, as the sun manifesteth itself by light, and fire by heat, or as the first principles of reason are evident in themselves without further proof or testimony; then every one, and all men, upon the proposal of the Scripture unto them, and its own bare assertion, that it is the word of God, would necessarily on that evidence alone assent thereunto, and believe it so to be. But this is not so, all experience lieth against it; nor is there any pleadable ground of reason that so it is, or that so it ought to be.

In answer unto this objection I shall do these two things,

1. I shall shew what it is, what power, what faculty in the minds of men, whereunto this revelation is proposed, and whereby we assent unto the truth of it, wherein the mistakes whereon this objection proceedeth will be discovered.

2. I shall mention some of those things, whereby the Holy Ghost testifieth and giveth evidence unto the Scripture in and by itself, so as that our faith may be immediately resolved into the veracity of God alone.

1. And in the first place we may consider, that there are three ways whereby we assent unto any thing that is proposed unto us as true, and receive it as such.

1. By inbred principles of natural light, and the first rational actings of our minds. This in reason answers instinct in irrational creatures. Hence God complains that his people did neglect and sin against their own natural light, and first dictates of reason, whereas brute creatures would not forsake the conduct of the instinct of their natures, Isa. i. 5. In general, the mind is necessarily determined to an assent unto the proper objects of these principles; it cannot do otherwise. It cannot but assent unto the prime dictates of the light of nature, yea those dictates are nothing but its assent. Its first apprehension of the things which the light of nature embraceth, without either express reasonings or further consideration, are this assent. Thus doth the mind embrace in it self the general notion of moral good and evil, with the difference between them, however it practically complies not with what they grieve unto; Jude ver. 10. And so doth it assent unto many principles of reason, as that the whole is greater than the part, without admitting any debate about them.

2. By rational considerations of things externally proposed unto us. Herein the mind exerciseth its discursive faculty, gathering one thing out of another, and concluding one thing from another. And hereon is it able to assent unto what is proposed unto it in various degrees of certainty, according unto the nature and degree of the evidence it proceeds upon. Hence it hath a certain knowledge of some things, of others an opinion or persuasion prevalent against the objections to the contrary, which it knows, and whose force it understands, which may be true or false.

3. By faith. This respects that power of our minds, whereby we are able to assent unto any thing as true, which we have no first principles concerning, no inbred notions of, nor can from more known principles make unto ourselves any certain rational conclusions concerning them. This is our assent upon testimony, whereon we believe many things, which no sense, inbred principles, nor reasonings of our own, could either give us an acquaintance

with, or an assurance of. And this assent also hath not only various degrees, but is also of divers kinds, according as the testimony is which it ariseth from, and resteth on ; as being human if that be human, and divine if that be so also.

According to these distinct faculties and powers of our souls, God is pleased to reveal or make known himself, his mind or will three ways unto us. For he hath im- planted no power on our minds, but the principal use and exercise of it are to be with respect unto himself, and our living unto him, which is the end of them all. And a neg- lection of the improvement of them unto this end, is the highest aggravation of sin. It is an aggravation of sin, when men abuse the creatures of God otherwise than he hath appointed, or in not using them to his glory ; wheri they take his corn, and wine, and oil, and spend them on their lusts, Hos. ii. 8. It is an higher aggravation when men in sinning abuse and dishonour their own bodies ; for these are the principal external workmanship of God, be- ing made for eternity, and whose preservation unto his glory is committed unto us in an especial manner. This the apostle declareth to be the peculiar aggravation of the sin of fornication and uncleanness in any kind, 1 Cor. vi. 18, 19. But the height of impiety consists in the abuse of the faculties and powers of the soul, wherewith we are en- dowed purposely and immediately for the glorifying of God. Hence proceed unbelief, profaneness, blasphemy, atheism, and the like pollution of the spirit or mind. And these are sins of the highest provocation. For the powers and faculties of our minds being given us only to enable us to live unto God, the diverting of their principal exer- cise unto other ends, is an act of enmity against him, and affront unto him.

1. He makes himself known unto us by the innate prin- ciples of our nature, unto which he hath communicated as a power of apprehending, so an indelible sense of his be- ing, his authority and his will, so far as our natural de-

pendence on him, and moral subjection unto him do require. For whereas there are two things in this natural light and first dictates of reason; first, a power of conceiving, discerning, and assenting; and secondly, a power of judging and determining upon the things so discerned and assented unto: by the one God makes known his being and essential properties; by the other his sovereign authority over all.

As to the first, the apostle affirms, that *το γνωσον το Θεος φυγεον εστιν εν αυτοις* Rom. i. 19. “That which may be known of “God,” (his essence, being, substance, his natural, necessary, essential properties,) “is manifest in them;” that is, it hath a self evidencing power, acting itself in the minds of all men endued with natural light and reason.

And as unto his sovereign authority, he doth evidence it in and by the consciences of men, which are the judgment that they make, and cannot but make, of themselves and their actions, with respect unto the authority and judgment of God, Rom. ii. 14, 15. And thus the mind doth assent unto the principles of God’s being and authority, antecedently unto any actual exercise of the discursive faculty of reason, or other testimony whatever.

2. He doth it unto our reason in its exercise, by proposing such things unto its consideration, as from whence it may and cannot but conclude in an assent unto the truth of what God intends to reveal unto us that way. This he doth by the works of creation and providence, which present themselves unavoidably unto reason in its exercise to instruct us in the nature, being, and properties of God.

Thus the “heavens declare the glory of God, and the “firmament sheweth his handy-work. Day unto day ut-“tereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. “There is no speech nor language where their voice is “not heard,” Psal. xix. 1, 2, 3. But yet they do not thus declare, evidence and reveal the glory of God unto the first principles and notions of natural light, without the actual exercise of reason. Only they do so “when

" we consider his heavens the work of his fingers, the moon and the stars which he hath ordained," as the same psalmist speaks, Psal. viii. 3. A rational consideration of them, their greatness, order, beauty, and use, is required unto that testimony and evidence which God gives in them and by them unto himself, his glorious being, power. To this purpose the apostle discourses at large concerning the works of creation, Rom. i. 20, 21, 22. as also of those of providence, Acts xiv. 15, 16, 17 chap. xvii. 24, 25, 26, 27, 28. and the rational use we are to make of them, ver. 29. So God calls unto men for the exercise of their reason about these things, reproaching them with stupidity and brutishness where they are wanting therein; Isa. xlvi. 7, 8, 9. chap. xliv. 18, 19, 20.

3. God reveals himself unto our faith, or that power of our souls whereby we are able to assent unto the truth of what is proposed unto us upon testimony. And this he doth by his word, or the Scriptures proposed unto us in the manner and way before expressed.

He doth not reveal himself by his word unto the principles of natural light, nor unto reason in its exercise. But yet these principles, and reason itself, with all the faculties of our minds, are consequentially affected with that revelation, and are drawn forth into their proper exercise by it. But in the gospel the righteousness of God "is revealed from faith to faith," Rom i. 17. not to natural light, sense or reason, in the first place. And it is faith that is the evidence of things not seen, as revealed in the word, Heb. xi. 1. Unto this kind of revelation, "Thus faith the Lord," is the only ground and reason of our assent; and that assent is the assent of faith, because it is resolved into testimony alone.

And concerning these several ways of the communication or revelation of the knowledge of God, it must be always observed, that there is a "perfect consonancy in the things revealed by them all." If any thing pretends from the one what is absolutely contradictory unto the

other, or our senses as the means of them, it is not to be received.

The foundation of the whole, as of all the actings of our souls, is in the inbred principles of natural light, or first necessary dictates of our intellectual rational nature. This, so far as it extends, is a rule unto our apprehension in all that follows. Wherefore if any pretend in the exercise of reason, to conclude unto any thing concerning the nature, being, or will of God, that is directly contradictory unto those principles and dictates. it is no divine revelation unto our reason, but a paralogism from the defect of reason in its exercise. This is that which the apostle chargeth on, and vehemently urgeth against the heathen philosophers. Inbred notions they had in themselves of the being and eternal power of God; and these were so manifest in them thereby, that they could not but own them. Hereon they set their rational discursive faculty at work in the consideration of God and his being. But herein were they so vain and foolish, as to draw conclusions directly contrary unto the first principles of natural light, and the unavoidable notions which they had of the eternal being of God, Rom. i. 21, 22, 23, 24. And many upon their pretended rational consideration of the promiscuous event of things in the world, have foolishly concluded that all things had a fortuitous beginning, and have fortuitous events, or such as from a concatenation of antecedent causes are fatally necessary, and are not disposed by an infinitely wise, unerring, holy Providence. And this also is directly contradictory unto the first principles and notions of natural light, whereby it openly proclaims itself not to be an effect of reason in its due exercise, but a mere delusion.

So if any pretend unto revelations by faith, which are contradictory unto the first principles of natural light, or reason in its proper exercise about its proper objects, it is a delusion. On this ground the Roman doctrine of transubstantiation is justly rejected; for it proposeth that as are-

velation by faith, which is expressly contradictory unto our sense and reason in their proper exercise about their proper objects. And a supposition of the possibility of any such thing, would make the ways whereby God reveals and makes known himself, to cross and interfere one with another; which would leave us no certainty in any thing divine or human.

But yet as these means of divine revelation do harmonize and perfectly agree one with the other; so they are not objectively equal, or equally extensive, nor are they co-ordinate, but subordinate unto one another. Wherefore there are many things discernible by reason in its exercise, which do not appear unto the first principles of natural light. So the sober philosophers of old attained unto many true and great conceptions of God, and the excellencies of his nature, above what they arrived unto, who either did not or could not cultivate and improve the principles of natural light in the same manner as they did. It is therefore folly to pretend that things so made known of God are not infallibly true and certain, because they are not obvious unto the first conceptions of natural light, without the due exercise of reason, provided they are not contradictory thereunto. And there are many things revealed unto faith that are above and beyond the comprehension of reason, in the best and utmost of its most proper exercise. Such are all the principal mysteries of Christian religion. And it is the height of folly to reject them, as some do, because they are not discernible and comprehensible by reason, seeing they are not contradictory thereunto. Wherefore these ways of God's revelation of himself, are not equally extensive, or commensurate, but are so subordinate one unto another, that what is wanting unto the one is supplied by the other, unto the accomplishment of the whole and entire end of divine revelation; and the truth of God is the same in them all.

The revelation which God makes of himself in the first way, by the inbred principles of natural light, doth suffi-

ciently and infallibly evidence itself to be from him; it doth it in, unto, and by those principles themselves. This revelation of God is infallible, the assent unto it is infallible, which the infallible evidence it gives of itself makes to be so. We dispute not now what a few atheistical sceptics pretend unto, whose folly hath been sufficiently detected by others. All the sobriety that is in the world consents in this, that the light of the knowledge of God, in and by the inbred principles of our minds and consciences, doth sufficiently, uncontroulably, and infallibly manifest itself to be from him, and that the mind neither is, nor can be possibly imposed on in its apprehensions of that nature. And if the first dictates of reason concerning God do not evidence themselves to be from God, they are neither of any use nor force; for they are not capable of being confirmed by external arguments; and what is written about them is to shew their force and evidence, not to give them any. Wherefore this first way of God's revelation of himself unto us is infallible, and infallibly evidenceth itself in our minds according to the capacity of our natures.

2. The revelation that God maketh of himself by the works of creation and providence, unto our reason in exercise, or the faculties of our souls as discursive, concluding rationally one thing from another, doth sufficiently, yea infallibly evidence and demonstrate itself to be from him, so that it is impossible we should be deceived therein. It doth not do so unto the inbred principles of natural light, unless they are engaged in a rational exercise about the means of the revelation made; that is, we must rationally consider the works of God, both of creation and providence, or we cannot learn by them what God intends to reveal of himself; and in our doing so we cannot be deceived. "For the invisible things of God from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead," Rom. i. 20. They are clearly seen, and therefore may be perfectly understood as to what doth

teach of God without any possibility of a mistake. And wherever men do not receive the revelation intended in the way intended, that is, do not certainly conclude that what God teaches by his works of creation and providence, namely his eternal power and Godhead, with the essential properties thereof, infinite wisdom, goodness, righteousness, and the like, is certainly and infallibly so, believing it accordingly; it is not from any defect in the revelation; or its self-evidencing efficacy, but only from the depraved, vicious habits of their minds, their enmity against God, and dislike of him. And so the apostle faith, that they who rejected or improved not the revelation of God, did it, “because they did not like to retain God in their knowledge,” Rom. i. 28. For which cause God did so severely revenge their natural unbelief, as is there expressed. See Isa. xlvi. 8. chap. xliv. 15, 19, 20. That which I principally insist on from hence is, that the revelation which God makes of himself by the works of creation and providence, doth not evidence itself unto the first principles of natural light, so as that an assent should be given thereunto without the actual exercise of reason, or the discursive faculty of our minds about them; but thereunto it doth infallibly evidence itself. So may the Scripture have, and hath a self-evidencing efficacy, though this appear not unto the light of first natural principles, no nor to bare reason in its exercise. For,

3. Unto our faith God reveals himself by the Scripture, or his word which he hath “magnified above all his name,” Psal. cxxxviii. 2. that is, implanted on it more characters of himself, and his properties, than on any other way whereby he revealeth or maketh himself known unto us. And this revelation of God by his word, we confess, is not sufficient nor suited to evidence itself unto the light of nature, or the first principles of our understanding, so that by bare proposal of it to be from God, we should by virtue of them immediately assent unto it, as men assent unto self-evident natural principles, as that the part is lesser

than the whole, or the like. Nor doth it evidence itself unto our reason in its mere natural exercise, as that by virtue thereof we can demonstratively conclude that it is from God, and that what is declared therein is certainly and infallibly true. It hath indeed such external evidences accompanying it, as makes a great impression on reason itself. But the power of our souls whereunto it is proposed, is that whereby we can give an assent unto the truth upon the testimony of the proposer, whereof we have no other evidence. And this is the principal and most noble faculty and power of our natures. There is an instinct in brute creatures, that hath some resemblance unto our inbred natural principles; and they will act that instinct, improved by experience, into a great likeness of reason in its exercise, although it be not so. But as unto the power or faculty of giving an assent unto things on witness or testimony, there is nothing in the nature of irrational creatures that hath the least shadow of it or likeness unto it. And if our souls did want but this one faculty of assenting unto truth upon testimony, all that remains would not be sufficient to conduct us through the affairs of this natural life. This therefore being the most noble faculty of our minds, is that whereunto the highest way of divine revelation is proposed.

4. That our minds in this especial case to make our assent to be according unto the mind of God, and such as is required of us in a way of duty, are to be prepared and assisted by the Holy Ghost, we have declared and proved before. On this supposition the revelation which God makes of himself by his word, doth no less evidence itself unto our minds in the exercise of faith to be from him, or gives no less infallible evidence as a ground and reason why we should believe it to be from him, than his revelation of himself by the works of creation and providence doth manifest itself unto our minds in the exercise of reason to be from him, nor with less assurance than what we assent unto in and by the dictates of natural light. And when God

revealeth himself, that is, his eternal power and Godhead, by the things that are made, the works of creation, “the heavens declaring his glory, and the firmament shewing his handy-work;” the reason of men stirred up and brought into exercise thereby, doth infallibly conclude upon the evidence that is in that revelation, that there is a God, and he eternally powerful and wise, without any further arguments to prove the revelation to be true. So when God by his word reveals himself unto the minds of men, thereby exciting and bringing forth faith into exercise, or the power of the soul to assent unto truth upon testimony, that revelation doth no less infallibly evidence itself to be divine or from God, without any external arguments to prove it so to be. If I shall say unto a man that the sun is risen and shineth on the earth; if he question or deny it, and ask how I will prove it; it is a sufficient answer to say, that it manifesteth itself in and by its own light: and if he add, that this is no proof to him for he doth not discern it; suppose that to be so, it is a satisfactory answer to tell him that he is blind; and if he be not so, that it is to no purpose to argue with him who contradic^ts his own sense, for he leaves no rule whereby what is spoken may be tried or judged on. And if I tell a man that the heavens declare the glory of God, and the firmament sheweth his handy-work, or that the invisible things of God from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made; and he shall demand how I prove it; it is a sufficient answer to say, that these things in and by themselves do manifest unto the reason of every man in its due and proper exercise, that there is an eternal, infinitely wise and powerful Being, by whom they were caus'd, produced and made; so as that whosoever knoweth how to use and exercise his reasonable faculty in the consideration of them, their original, order, nature and use, must necessarily conclude that so it is. If he shall say, that it doth not so appear unto him that the being of God is so revealed by them; it is a suffi-

cient reply, in case he be so indeed, to say he is phrenetic, and hath not the use of his reason; and if he be not so, that he argues in express contradiction unto his own reason, as may be demonstrated This the heathen philosophers granted. *Quid potest* (saith Cicero) *esse tam apertum tamq; perspicuum, cum Cælum suspeximus, cœlestiaq; contemplati sumus, quam esse aliquid Numen præstantissimæ mentis, quo hæc reguntur; quod qui dubitat haud sane intelligo cur non idem Sol sit, an nullus sit dubitare possit.* De Natura Deor. lib. 2. And if I declare unto any one, that the Scripture is the word of God, a divine revelation, and that it doth evidence and manifest itself so to be. If he shall say, that he hath the use and exercise of his sense and reason as well as others, and yet it doth not appear unto him so to be; it is as unto the present enquiry, a sufficient reply for the security of the authority of the Scriptures (though other means may be used for his conviction) to say, that all men have not faith; by which alone the evidence of the divine authority of the Scripture is discoverable; in the light whereof alone we can read those characters of its divine extract, which are impressed on it, and communicated unto it.

If it be not so, seeing it is a divine revelation, and it is our duty to believe it so to be, it must be either because our faith is not fitted, suited, nor able to receive such an evidence, suppose God would give it unto the revelation of himself by his word, as he hath done unto those by the light of nature and works of providence; or because God would not or could not give such an evidence unto his word as might manifest itself so to be. And neither of these can be affirmed without an high reflection on the wisdom and goodness of God.

That our faith is capable of giving such an assent is evident from hence, because God works it in us, and bestows it upon us for this very end. And God requireth of us that we should infallibly believe what he proposeth unto us, at least when we have infallible evidence that it is

from him. And as he appointeth faith unto this end, and approveth of its exercise, so he doth both judge and condemn them who fail therein, 2 Chron. xx. 20. Isa. vii. 9. Mark xvi. 16. Yea our faith is capable of giving an assent, though of another kind, more firm and accompanied with more assurance, than any is given by reason in the best of its conclusions. And the reason is, because the power of the mind to give assent upon testimony, which is its most noble faculty, is elevated and strengthened by the divine supernatural work of the Holy Ghost, before described.

To say that God either could not or would not give such a power unto the revelation of himself by his word, as to evidence itself to be so, is exceedingly prejudicial unto his honour and glory, seeing the everlasting welfare of the souls of men, is incomparably more concerned therein than in the other ways mentioned. And what reason could be assigned why he should implant a less evidence of his divine authority on this than on them, seeing he designed far greater and more glorious ends in this than in them. If any one shall lay the reason is, because this kind of divine revelation is not capable of receiving such evidences; it must be either because there cannot be evident characters of divine authority, goodness, wisdom, power, implanted on it, or mixed with it; or because an efficacy to manifest them cannot be communicated unto it. That both these are otherwise, shall be demonstrated in the last part of this discourse, which I shall now enter upon.

It hath been already declared, that it is the authority and veracity of God; revealing themselves in the Scripture and by it, that is the formal reason of our faith, or supernatural assent unto it as it is the word of God.

It remains only that we enquire in the second place into the way and means whereby they evidence themselves unto us, and the Scripture thereby to be the word of God, so as that we may undoubtedly and infallibly believe it so

to be. Now because faith, as we have shewed, is an assent upon testimony, and consequently divine faith is an assent upon divine testimony. There must be some testimony or witness in this case whereon faith doth rest. And this we say is the testimony of the Holy Ghost, the author of the Scriptures, given unto them in them and by them. And this work or testimony of the Spirit may be reduced unto two heads, which may be distinctly insist'd on.

1. The impressions or characters which are subjectively left in the Scripture and upon it, by the Holy Spirit its author, of all the divine excellencies or properties of the divine nature, are the first means evidencing that testimony of the Spirit which our faith rests upon; or they do give the first evidence of its divine original and authority, whereon we do believe it. The way whereby we learn the eternal power and deity of God from the works of creation, is no otherwise but by those marks, tokens and impressions of his divine power, wisdom and goodness that are upon them. For from the consideration of their subsistence, greatness, order and use, reason doth necessarily conclude an infinite subsisting Being, of whose power and wisdom these things are the manifest effects. These are clearly seen and understood by the things that are made; we need no other arguments to prove that God made the world, but itself. It carrieth in it and upon it the infallible tokens of its original. See to this purpose the blessed meditation of the Psalmist, Psal. civ. throughout. Now there are greater and more evident impressions of divine excellencies left on the written word from the infinite wisdom of the author of it, than any that are communicated unto the works of God, of what sort soever. Hence David comparing the works and the word of God, as to their instructive efficacy in declaring God and his glory, although he ascribe much unto the works of creation, yet doth he prefer the word incomparably before them, Psal. xix. 1, 2, 3, 7, 8, 9. and Psal. cxlvii. 8, 9, &c. and 19, 20. And these do manifest the word un-

to our faith to be his more clearly, than the other do the works to be his unto our reason. As yet I do not know that it is denied by any, or the contrary asserted, namely, that God, as the immediate author of the Scripture, hath left in the very word itself evident tokens and impressions of his wisdom, prescience, omniscience, power, goodness, holiness, truth, and other divine, infinite excellencies, sufficiently evidenced unto the enlightened minds of believers. Some I confess speak suspiciously herein; but until they will directly deny it, I shall not need further to confirm it, than I have done long since in another treatise. And I leave it to be considered, whether (morally speaking) it be possible that God should immediately by himself, from the eternal counsels of his will, reveal himself, his mind, the thoughts and purposes of his heart, which had been hidden in himself from eternity, on purpose that we should believe them, and yield obedience unto him, according to the declaration of himself so made, and yet not give with it, or leave upon it any *re^{gu}l^an^tu^m*, any infallible token, evidencing him to be the author of that revelation. Men who are not ashamed of their Christianity, will not be so to profess and seal that profession with their blood, and to rest their eternal concerns on that security herein which they have attained, namely, that there is that manifestation made of the glorious properties of God in and by the Scripture, as it is a divine revelation which incomparably excels in evidence all that their reason receives concerning his power from the works of creation.

This is that whereon we believe the Scripture to be the word of God with faith divine and supernatural, if we believe it so at all. There is in itself that evidence of its divine original, from the characters of divine excellencies left upon it by its author the Holy Ghost, as faith quietly rests in, and is resolved into. And this evidence is manifest unto the meanest and most unlearned no less than unto the wisest philosophers. And the truth is, if rational arguments and external motives were the sole ground

of receiving the Scripture to be the word of God, it could not be, but that learned men and philosophers would have always been the farwardest, and most ready to admit it, and most firmly to adhere unto it, and its profession. For whereas all such arguments do prevail on the minds of men, according as they are able aright to discern their force, and judge of them, learned philosophers would have had the advantage incomparably above others. And so some of late affirmed, that it was the wise, rational, and learned men, who at first most readily received the gospel ; an assertion which nothing but gross ignorance of the Scripture itself, and all the writings concerning the original of Christianity, whether of Christians or heathens, could give the least countenance unto ; see 1 Cor. i. 23, 26. From hence is the Scripture so often compared unto light, called light, “ a light shining in a dark place,” which will evidence itself unto all who are not blind, or do wilfully shut their eyes, or have their eyes blinded by the god of this world, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them ; which consideration I have handled at large elsewhere.

2. The Spirit of God evidenceth the divine original and authority of the Scripture, by the power and authority which he puts forth in it and by it over the minds and consciences of men, with its operation of divine effects thereon. This the apostle expressly affirms to be the reason and cause of faith, 1 Cor xiv. 24, 25. “ If all prophesy, “ and there comes in one that believeth not, or one un-“ learned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all. And “ thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so “ falling down on his face, he will worship God, and re-“ port that God is in you of a truth.” The acknowledgement and confession of God to be in them or among them, is a profession of faith in the word administered by them. Such persons assent unto its divine authority, or believe it to be the word of God. And on what evidence or ground of credibility they did so, is expressly declared. It was

not upon the force of any external arguments produced and pleaded unto that purpose. It was not upon the testimony of this or that or any church whatever; nor was it upon a conviction of any miracles which they saw wrought in its confirmation. Yea the ground of the faith and confession declared, is opposed unto the efficacy and use of the miraculous gift of tongues, verse 23, 24. Wherefore the only evidence whereon they received the word, and acknowledged it to be of God, was that divine power and efficacy, whereof they found and felt the experience in themselves. “He is convinced of all, judged of all, and “thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest,” whereon he falls down before it with an acknowledgement of its divine authority, finding the word to come upon his conscience with an irresistible power of conviction and judgment thereon, (“he is convinced of all, judged of all”) He cannot but grant that there is *επινοητης*, a divine efficacy in it, or accompanying of it. Especially his mind is influenced by this, that the “secrets of his heart are made manifest by it.” For all men must acknowledge this to be an effect of divine power; seeing God alone is *καρδιογνωστης*, “he who searcheth, knoweth, and judgeth the heart.” And if the woman of Samaria believed that Jesus was the Christ, because he “told her all things that ever she did,” John iv. 29. there is reason to believe that word to be from God, which makes manifest even the secrets of our hearts. And although I do conceive that by the “Word of God,” Heb. iv. 12. the living and eternal Word is principally intended, yet the power and efficacy there ascribed to him, is that which he puts forth by the word of the gospel. And so that word also, in its place and use, “pierceth to the “dividing asunder of soul and spirit, of the joints and “marrow, and is a discerner,” or passeth a critical judgment on the “thoughts and intents of the heart,” or makes manifest the secrets of men’s hearts, as it is here expressed. Hereby then doth the Holy Ghost so evidence the divine authority of the word, namely, by that divine power

which it hath upon our souls and consciences, that we do assuredly acquiesce in it to be from God. So the Thessalonians are commended, that they " received the word " not as the word of men, but as it is in truth the word " of God, which effectually works in them that believe," 1 Thess ii. 15. It distinguisheth itself from the word of men, and evidences itself to be indeed the word of God by its effectual operation in them that believe. And he who hath this testimony in himself hath a higher and more firm assurance of the truth, than what can be attained by the force of external arguments, or the credit of human testimony. Wherefore I say in general, that the Holy Spirit giveth testimony unto, and evinceth the divine authority of the word, by its powerful operations, and divine effects on the souls of them that do believe. So that although it be weakness and foolishness unto others, yet as is Christ himself unto them that are called, it is the power of God, and the wisdom of God.

And I must say, that although a man be furnished with external arguments of all sorts, concerning the divine original and authority of the Scriptures; although he esteem his motives of credibility to be effectually persuasive, and have the authority of any or all the churches in the world to confirm his persuasion, yet if he have no experience in himself of its divine power, authority and efficacy, he neither doth nor can believe it to be the word of God in a due manner, with faith divine and supernatural. But he that hath this experience hath that testimony in himself which will never fail.

This will be the more manifest, if we consider some few of those many instances, wherein it exerts its power, or the effects which are produced thereby.

The principal divine effect of the word of God is in the conversion of the souls of sinners unto God. The greatness and glory of this work we have elsewhere declared at large. And all those who are acquainted with it as it is declared in the Scripture, and have any experience of it in

their own hearts, do constantly give it as an instance of the exceeding greatness of the power of God. It may be they speak not improperly, who prefer the work of the new creation before the work of the old, for the express evidences of almighty power contained in it, as some of the ancients do. Now of this great and glorious effect the word is the only instrumental cause, whereby the divine power operates and is expressive of itself. For we are born again, born of God, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible by the word of God, which abideth for ever, 1 Pet. i. 21. For of his own will doth God "beget us with the word of truth," Jam. i. 18. The word is the seed of the new creature in us, that whereby our whole natures, our souls and all their faculties are changed and renewed into the image and likeness of God. And by the same word is this new nature kept and preserved, 1 Pet. ii. 2. and the whole soul carried on unto the enjoyment of God. It is unto believers an ingrafted word, which is able to save their souls; James i. 21. "The word of God's grace, which is able to build us up, and give us an inheritance among them that are sanctified," Acts xx. 32. And that because it is the "power of God unto salvation unto them that do believe," Rom. i. 16. All the power which God puts forth and exerts in the communication of that grace and mercy unto believers, whereby they are gradually carried on and prepared unto salvation, he doth it by the word. Therein, in an especial manner, is the divine authority of the word evidenced by the divine power and efficacy given unto it by the Holy Ghost. The work which is effected by it in the regeneration, conversion, and sanctification of the souls of believers, doth evidence it infallibly unto their consciences, that it is not the word of man, but of God. It will be said, this testimony is private in the minds only of them on whom this work is wrought. And therefore do I press it no further; but he that "believeth hath the witness in himself, 1 John v. 10. Let it be granted, that all who are really converted

unto God by the power of the word, have that infallible evidence and testimony of its divine original, authority and power in their own souls and consciences, that they thereon believe it with faith divine and supernatural, in conjunction with the other evidences before mentioned, as parts of the same divine testimony, and it is all I aim at herein.

But yet although this testimony be privately received (for in itself it is not so, but common unto all believers) yet is it ministerially pleadable in the church, as a principal motive unto believing. A declaration of the divine power which some have found by experience in the word, is an ordinance of God to convince others, and to bring them unto the faith. Yea of all the external arguments that are or may be pleaded to justify the divine authority of the Scripture, there is none more prevalent nor cogent, than this of its mighty efficacy in all ages on the souls of men, to change, convert, and renew them into the image and likeness of God, which hath been visible and manifest.

Moreover there are yet other particular effects of the divine power of the word on the minds and consciences of men, belonging unto this general work, either preceding or following of it, which are clearly sensible and enlarge the evidence. As,

1. The work of conviction of sin on those who expected it not, who desired it not, and who would avoid it if by any means possible they could. The world is filled with instances of this nature; whilst men have been full of love to their sins, at peace in them, enjoying benefit and advantage by them, the word coming upon them in its power, hath awed, disquieted, and terrified them, taken away their peace, destroyed their hopes, and made them as it were whether they would or no, that is, contrary to their desires, inclinations and carnal affections, to conclude that if they comply not with what is proposed unto them in that word, which before they took no notice of, nor had any regard unto, they must be presently or eternally miserable.

Conscience is the territory or dominion of God in man, which he hath so reserved unto himself, that no human power can possibly enter into it, or dispose of it in any wise. But in this work of conviction of sin, the word of God, the Scripture, entereth into the conscience of the sinner, takes possession of it, disposeth it unto peace or trouble by its laws or rules, and no otherwise. Where it gives disquietments, all the world cannot give it peace; and where it speaks peace there is none can give it trouble. Were not this the Word of God, how should it come thus to speak in his name, and to act his authority in the consciences of men as it doth? when once it begins this work, conscience immediately owns a new rule, a new law, a new government, in order to the judgement of God upon it and all its actions. And it is contrary to the nature of conscience to take this upon itself, nor would it do so, but that it sensibly finds God speaking and acting in it, and by it; see 1 Cor. xiv. 25, 26. An invasion may be made on the outward duties that conscience disposeth unto; but none can be so upon its internal actings. No power under heaven can cause conscience to think, act, or judge otherwise than it doth by its immediate respect unto God. For it is the mind's self-judging with respect unto God; and what is not so, is no act of conscience. Wherefore to force an act of conscience implies a contradiction. However it may be defiled, bribed, feared, and at length utterly debauched; admit of a superior power, a power above or over itself under God it cannot.

I know conscience may be prepossessed with prejudices; and by education, with the insinuation of traditions, take on itself the power of false, corrupt, superstitious principles and errors, as means of conveying unto it a sense of divine authority; so is it with the Mahometans, and other false worshippers in the world. But the power of those divine convictions, whereof we treat, is manifestly different from such prejudicate opinions. For where these are not imposed on men by artifices and delusions easily discoverable,

they prepossess their minds and inclinations by traditions, antecedently unto any right judgment they can make of themselves or other things; and they are generally wrapt up and condited in their secular interests. The convictions we treat of come from without, upon the minds of men, and that with a sensible power, prevailing over all their previous thoughts and inclinations. Those first affect, deceive and delude the notional part of the soul, whereby conscience is insensibly influenced and diverted into improper respects, and is deceived as to its judging of the voice of God; these immediately principle the practical understanding and self-judging power of the soul. Wherefore such opinions and persuasions are gradually insinuated into the mind, and are admitted insensibly without opposition or reluctance, being never accompanied at their first admission with any secular advantage. But these divine convictions by the word befall men, some when they think of nothing less, and desire nothing less; some when they design other things, as the pleasing of their ears, or the entertainment of their company; and some that go on purpose to deride and scoff at what should be spoken unto them from it. It might also be added unto the same purpose, how confirmed some have been in their carnal peace and security, by love of sin, with innumerable inveterate prejudices; what losses and ruin to their outward concerns many have fallen into by admitting of their convictions; what force, diligence, and artifices have been used to defeat them, what contribution of aid and assistance hath there been from Satan unto this purpose; and yet against all hath the divine power of the word absolutely prevailed, and accomplished its whole designed effect. See 2 Cor. x. 4, 5. Jer. xxiii. 29. Zech. i. 6.

2. It doth it by the light that is in it, and that spiritual illuminating efficacy wherewith it is accompanied. Hence it is called a "light shining in a dark place," 2 Pet. i. 19. That light whereby God shines into the hearts and minds of men, 2 Cor. iv. 6. Without the Scripture all the

world is in darkness. "Darkness covers the earth, and thick darkness the people," Isa. ix. 2. It is the kingdom of Satan filled with darkness and confusion. Superstition, idolatry, lying vanities, wherein men know not at all what they do, nor whither they go, fill the whole world; even as it is at this day. And the minds of men are naturally in darkness; there is a blindness upon them that they cannot see nor discern spiritual things, no not when they are externally proposed unto them, as I have at large evinced elsewhere. And no man can give a greater evidence that it is so, than he who denies it so to be. With respect unto both these kinds of darkness the Scripture is a light, and accompanied with a spiritual illuminating efficacy, thereby evidencing itself to be a divine revelation. For what but divine truth could recall the minds of men from all their wanderings in error, superstition, and other effects of darkness, which of themselves they love more than truth? All things being filled with vanity, error, confusion, misapprehensions about God and ourselves, our duty and end, our misery and blessedness; the Scripture, where it is communicated by the providence of God, comes in as a light in a dark place, discovering all things clearly and steadily, that concern either God or ourselves, our present or future condition; causing all the ghosts, and false images of things which men had framed and fancied unto themselves in the dark, to vanish and disappear. *Digitus Dei!* there is none other but the power of God. But principally it evidenceth this its divine efficacy, by that spiritual saving light, which it conveys into and implants on the minds of believers. Hence there is none of them who have gained any experience by the observation of God's dealings with them, but shall, although they know not the ways and methods of the Spirit's operations by the word, yea can say with the man unto whom the Lord Jesus restored his sight, "One thing I know, that whereas I was born blind, now I see." This power of the word, as the instrument of the spirit of God for the communication of saving light,

and knowledge unto the minds of men, the apostle declares, 2 Cor. iii. 18. chap. iv. 4, 6. By the efficacy of this power doth he evidence the Scripture to be the word of God. Those who believe, find by it a glorious supernatural light introduced into their minds, whereby they who before saw nothing in a distinct affecting manner in spirituals, do now clearly discern the truth, the glory, the beauty, and excellency of heavenly mysteries, and have their minds transformed into their image and likeness. And there is no person who hath the witness in himself of the kindling of this heavenly light in his mind by the Word, but hath also the evidence in himself of its divine original.

3. It doth in like manner evidence its divine authority by the awe which it puts on the minds of the generality of mankind unto whom it is made known, that they dare not absolutely reject it. Multitudes there are unto whom the word is declared, who hate all its precepts, despise all its promises, abhor all its threatenings, like nothing, approve of nothing of what it declares or proposes, and yet dare not absolutely refuse or reject it. They deal with it as they do with God himself, whom they hate also, according to the revelation which he hath made of himself in his word. They wish he were not, sometimes they hope he is not, would be glad to be free of his rule, but yet dare not, cannot absolutely deny and disown him, because of that testimony for himself, which he keeps alive in them whether they will or no. The same is the frame of their hearts and minds towards the Scripture, and that for no other reason but because it is the word of God, and manifesteth itself so to be. They hate it, wish it were not, hope it is not true, but are not by any means able to shake off a disquiet in the sense of its divine authority. This testimony it hath fixed in the hearts of multitudes of its enemies; Psal. xlv. 5.

4. It evidences its divine power in administering strong consolations in the deepest and most unrelievable distresses. Some such there are, and such many men fall into, wherein,

all means and hopes of relief may be utterly removed and taken away. So is it when the miseries of men are not known unto any that will so much as pity them, or wish them relief; or if they have been known, and there hath been an eye to pity them, yet there hath been no hand to help them. Such hath been the condition of innumerable souls, as on other accounts, so in particular under the power of persecutors; when they have been shut up in filthy and nasty dungeons, not to be brought out but unto death by the most exquisite tortures that the malice of hell could invent, or the bloody cruelty of man inflict. Yet in these and the like distresses doth the word of God, by its divine power and efficacy, break through all interposing difficulties, all dark and discouraging circumstances, supporting, refreshing, and comforting such poor distressed sufferers, yea commonly filling them under overwhelming calamities "with joy unspeakable and full of glory." Though they are in bonds, yet is the word of God not bound; neither can all the power of hell, nor all the diligence or fury of men keep out the word from entering into prisons, dungeons, flames, and to administer strong consolations against all fears, pains, wants, dangers, deaths, or whatever we may in this mortal life be exposed unto. And sundry other instances of the like nature might be pleaded, wherein the word gives evident demonstrations unto the minds and consciences of men of its own divine power and authority; which is the second way whereby the Holy Ghost its author gives testimony unto its original.

But it is not merely the grounds and reasons whereon we believe the Scripture to be the word of God, which we designed to declare. The whole work of the Holy Spirit enabling us to believe them so to be was proposed unto consideration. And beyond what we have insisted on, there is yet a further peculiar work of his, whereby he effectually ascertains our minds of the Scriptures being the word of God, whereby we are ultimately established in the faith.

thereof. And I cannot but both admire and bewail that this should be denied by any that would be esteemed Christians. Wherefore if there be any necessity thereof, I shall take occasion, in the second part of this discourse, further to confirm this part of the truth thus far debated, namely, That God by his Holy Spirit doth secretly and effectually persuade and satisfy the minds and souls of believers in the divine truth and authority of the Scriptures, whereby he infallibly secures their faith against all objections and temptations whatsoever; so that they can safely and comfortably dispose of their souls in all their concernments, with respect unto this life and eternity, according unto the undeceivable truth and guidance of it. But I shall no further insist on these things at present.

CHAP. VII.

References from the whole.—Some objections answered.

THREE things do offer themselves unto consideration from what hath been discoursed.

1. What is the ground and reason why the meanest and most unlearned sort of believers do assent unto this truth, that the Scriptures are the word of God, with no less firmness, certainty, and assurance of mind, than do the wisest and most learned of them. Yea oft times the faith of the former sort herein is of the best growth, and firmest consistency against oppositions and temptations. Now no assent of the mind can be accompanied with any more assurance than the evidence whose effect it is, and which it is resolved into, will afford. Nor doth any evidence of truth beget an assent unto it in the mind, but as it is apprehended and understood. Wherefore the evidence of this truth, wherein soever it consists, must be that which is perceived, apprehended and understood, by the meanest

and most unlearned sort of true believers. For, as was said, they do no less firmly assent and adhere unto it, than the wisest and most learned of them. It cannot therefore consist in such subtil and learned arguments, whose sense they cannot understand or comprehend. But the things we have pleaded are of another nature. For those characters of divine wisdom, goodness, holiness, grace, and sovereign authority, which are implanted on the Scripture by the Holy Ghost, are as legible unto the faith of the meanest, as of the most learned believer. And they also are no less capable of an experimental understanding of the divine power and efficacy of the Scriptures, in all its spiritual operations, than those who are more wise and skilful in discerning the force of external arguments and motives of credibility. It must therefore of necessity be granted, that the formal reason of faith consists in those things, whereof the evidence is equally obvious unto all sorts of believers.

2. Whence it is that the assent of faith, whereby we believe the Scriptures to be the word of God, is usually affirmed to be accompanied with more assurance than any assent which is the effect of science upon the most demonstrative principles. They who affirm this, do not consider faith as it is in this or that individual person, or in all that do sincerely believe; but in its own nature and essence, and what it is meet and able to produce. And the schoolmen do distinguish between a certainty or an assurance of evidence, and an assurance of adherence. In the latter they say the certainty of faith exceeds that of science; but it is less in respect of the former. But it is not easily to be conceived how the certainty of adherence should exceed the certainty of evidence, with respect unto any object whatsoever. That which seems to render a difference in this case is, that the evidence which we have in things scientifical is speculative, and affects the mind only; but the evidence which we have by faith effectually worketh on the will also, because of the goodness and excellency of the things that are believed.

And hence it is that the whole soul doth more firmly adhere unto the objects of faith upon that evidence which it hath of them, than unto other things whereof it hath clearer evidence, wherein the will and the affections are little or not at all concerned. And Bonaventure giveth reason of no small weight, why faith is more certain than science, not with the certainty of speculation, but of adherence: *Quoniam fideles Christiani, nec argumentis, nec tormentis, nec Blandimentis adduci possunt, vel inclinari, ut veritatem quam credunt vel ore tenus negent; quod nemo peritus alius scientie faceret, si acerrimis tormentis cogeretur scientiam suam de conclusione aliqua Geometrica vel Arithmetica retractare. Stultus enim & ridiculus esset Geometra, qui pro sua scientia in controversiis Geometricis mortem auderet subire, nisi in quantum dictat fides, non esse mentiendum.* And whatever may be said of this distinction, I think it cannot modestly be denied, that there is a greater assurance in faith, than any is in scientifical conclusions; until as many good and wise men will part with all their wordly concernsments, and their lives, by the most exquisite tortures, in the confirmation of any truth which they have received merely on the ground of reason acting in human sciences, as have so done on the certainty which they had by faith, that the Scripture is a divine revelation. For in bearing testimony hereunto, have innumerable multitudes of the best, the holiest and the wifest men that ever were in the world, chearfully and joyfully sacrificed all their temporal, and adventured all their eternal concernsments. For they did it under a full satisfaction that in parting with all temporary things, they should be eternally blessed, or eternally miserable, according as their persuasion in faith proved true or false. Wherefore unto the firmitude and constancy which we have in the assurance of faith, three things do concur.

1. That this ability of attēnt upon testimony, is the highest and most noble power or faculty of our rational souls; and therefore where it hath the highest evidence

whereof it is capable, which it hath in the testimony of God, it giveth us the highest certainty or assurance, whereof in this world we are capable.

2. Unto the assent of divine faith there is required an especial internal operation of the Holy Ghost. This rendereth it of another nature than any mere natural act and operation of our minds. And therefore if the assurance of it may not properly be said to exceed the assurance of science in degree, it is only because it is of a more excellent kind, and so is not capable of comparison unto it as to degrees.

3. That the revelation which God makes of himself, his mind and will by his word, is more excellent, and accompanied with greater evidence of his infinitely glorious properties, wherein alone the mind can find absolute rest and satisfaction (which is its assurance) than any other discovery of truth of what sort soever is capable of. Neither is the assurance of the mind absolutely perfect in any thing beneath the enjoyment of God. Wherefore the soul by faith making the nearest approaches, whereof in this life it is capable, unto the eternal spring of being, truth and goodness, it hath the highest rest, satisfaction and assurance therein that in this life it can attain unto.

3. It followeth from hence, that those that would deny either of those two things, or would so separate between them, as to exclude the necessity of either unto the duty of believing, namely, the internal work of the Holy Spirit on the minds of men, enabling them to believe, and the external work of the same Holy Spirit giving evidence in and by the Scripture unto its own divine original; do endeavour to expel all true divine faith out of the world, and to substitute a probable persuasion in the room thereof.

For a close unto this discourse, which hath now been drawn forth unto a greater length than was at first intended, I shall consider some objections that are usually pleaded in opposition unto the truth asserted and vindicated.

It is therefore objected in the first place, that the plea

hitherto insisted on cannot be managed without great disadvantage to Christian religion. For if we take away the rational grounds, on which we believe the doctrine of Christ to be true and divine, and the whole evidence of the truth of it be laid on things not only derided by men of atheistical spirits, but in themselves such as cannot be discerned by any but such as do believe, on what grounds can we proceed to convince an unbeliever?

Answer 1. By the way, it is one thing to prove and believe the doctrine of Christ to be true and divine; another to prove and believe the Scripture to be given by inspiration of God, or the divine authority of the Scripture, which alone was proposed unto consideration. A doctrine true and divine may be written in and proposed unto us by writings that were not divinely and infallibly inspired; and so might the doctrine of Christ have been, but not without the unspeakable disadvantage of the church. And there are sundry arguments which forcibly and effectually prove the doctrine of Christ to have been true and divine; which are not of any efficacy to prove the divine authority of the Scriptures; though on the other hand, whatever doth prove the divine authority of the Scriptures, doth equally prove the divine truth of the doctrine of Christ.

2. There are two ways of convincing unbelievers; the one insisted on by the apostles and their followers, the other by some learned men since their days. The way principally insisted on by the apostles was, by preaching the word itself unto them in the evidence and demonstration of the Spirit, by the power whereof manifesting the authority of God in it, they were convinced; and “falling down acknowledged God to be in it of a truth,” 1 Cor. ii. 4, 5. ch. xiv. 25, 26. It is likely that in this their proposal of the gospel, the doctrine and truths contained in it unto unbelievers, that those of atheistical spirits would both deride them and it; and so indeed it came to pass, many esteeming themselves to be bablers, and their doctrine

to be errant folly. But yet they desisted not from pursuing their work in the same way, whereunto God gave success. The other way is to prove unto believers that the Scripture is true and divine by rational arguments, wherein some learned persons have laboured, especially in these last ages, to very good purpose. And certainly their labours are greatly to be commended, whilst they attend unto these rules. 1. That they produce no arguments but such as are cogent, and not liable unto just exceptions. For if to manifest their own skill or learning, they plead such reasons as are capable of an answer and solution, they exceedingly prejudice the truth by subjecting it unto dubious disputationes, whereas in itself it is clear, firm, and sacred. 2. That they do not pretend their rational grounds and arguments to be the sole foundation that faith hath to rest upon, or which it is resolved into. For this were the ready way to set up an opinion instead of faith supernatural and divine. Accept but of these two limitations, and it is acknowledged that the rational grounds and arguments intended may be rationally pleaded, and ought so to be, unto the conviction of gainsayers. For no man doth so plead the self-evidencing power of the Scripture, as to deny that the use of other external motives and arguments is necessary to stop the mouths of atheists, as also unto the further establishment of them who do believe. These things are subordinate, and no way inconsistent.

The truth is, if we will attend unto our own and the experience of the whole church of God, the way whereby we come to believe the Scripture to be the word of God ordinarily is this and no other. God having first given his word as the foundation of our faith and obedience, hath appointed the ministry of men, at first extraordinary, afterwards ordinary, to propose unto us the doctrines, truths, precepts, promises, and threatenings contained therein. Together with this proposition of them, they are appointed to declare that these things are not from themselves, nor of their own invention, 2 Tim. iii. 14, 15,

16, 17. And this is done variously. Unto some the word of God in this ministry thus comes, or is thus proposed, preached or declared, whilst they are in a condition not only utterly unacquainted with the mysteries of it, but filled with contrary apprehensions and consequently prejudices against it. Thus it came of old unto the Pagan world, and must do so unto such persons and nations as are yet in the same state with them. Unto these the first preachers of the gospel did not produce the book of the Scriptures, and to tell them that it was the word of God, and that it would evidence itself unto them so to be. For this had been to despise the wisdom and authority of God in their own ministry. But they preached the doctrines of it unto them, grounding themselves on the divine revelation contained therein. And this proposition of the truth or preaching of the gospel, was not left of God to work itself into the reasons of men by the suitableness of it thereunto; but being his own institution for their illumination and conversion, he accompanied it with divine power, and made it effectual unto the ends designed, Rom. i. 16. And the event hereof among mankind was, that by some this new doctrine was derided and scorned, by others whose hearts God opened to attend unto it, it was embraced and submitted unto. Among those who after the propagation of the gospel are born, as they say, within the pale of the church, the same doctrine is variously instilled into persons according unto the several duties and concerns of others to instruct them. Principally the ministry of the word is ordained of God unto that end whereon the church is the ground and pillar of truth. Those of both sorts unto whom the doctrine mentioned is preached or proposed, are directed unto the Scriptures as the sacred repository thereof. For they are told that these things come by revelation from God, and that revelation is contained in the Bible, which is his word. Upon this proposal with enquiry into it and consideration of it, God co-operating by his Spirit, there is that evidence of its di-

vine original communicated unto their minds through its power and efficacy, with the characters of divine wisdom and holiness implanted on it, which they are now enabled to discern, that they believe it and rest in it as the immediate word of God. Thus was it in the case of the woman of Samaria, and the inhabitants of Sychar, with respect unto their faith in Christ Jesus, John iv. 42. This is the way whereby men ordinarily are brought to believe the word of God, Rom. x. 14, 15. and that neither by external arguments or motives, which no one soul was ever converted unto God by, nor by any mere naked proposal and offer of the book unto them, nor by miracles, nor by immediate revelation or private subjective testimony of the Spirit; nor is their faith a persuasion of mind, that they can give no reason of, but only that they are so persuaded.

But it will be yet further objected, that if there be such clear evidences in the thing itself, that is, in the divine original and authority of the Scriptures, that none who freely use their reason can deny it; then it lies either in the naked proposal of the things unto the understanding; and if so, then every one that assents unto this proposition, that the whole is greater than the part, must likewise assent unto this that the Scripture is the word of God, or the evidence must not ly in the naked proposal, but in the efficacy of the Spirit of God in the minds of them unto whom it is proposed.

Answer 1. I know no divine, ancient or modern, popish or protestant, who doth not assert that there is a work of the Holy Ghost on the minds of men necessary unto a due belief of the Scriptures to be the word of God. And the consideration hereof ought not by any Christian to be excluded. But they say not that this is the objective testimony or evidence on which we believe the Scripture to be the word of God, concerning which alone is our enquiry.

2. We do not dispute how far or by what means this

proposition, the Scripture is the word of God, may be evidenced merely unto our reason; but unto our understanding as capable of giving an assent upon testimony. It is not said that this is a first principle of reason, though it be of faith, nor that it is capable of a mathematical demonstration. That the whole is greater than the part, is self-evident unto our reason upon its first proposal; but such none pretends to be in the Scripture, because it is a subject not capable of it. Nor do those who denying the self-evidence of the Scripture, pretend by their arguments for its divine authority to give such an evidence of it unto reason, as is in first principles, or mathematical demonstrations, but content themselves with that which they call a moral certainty. But it is by faith we are obliged to receive the truth of this proposition, which respects the power of our minds to assent unto truth upon testimony, infallibly on that which is infallible. And hereunto it evidenceth its own truth, not with the same, but with an evidence and certainty of an higher nature and nobler kind than that of the strictest demonstration in things natural, or the most forcible arguments in things moral.

3. It will be objected, that if this be so, then none can be obliged to receive the Scripture as the word of God who hath not faith, and none have faith, but those in whom it is wrought by the Spirit of God, and thereinto all will be resolved at last.

Answer 1. Indeed there is no room for this objection; for the whole work of the Spirit is pleaded only as he is the efficient cause of believing, and not the objective, or reason why we do believe. But,

2. We must not be ashamed to resolve all we do well, spiritually and in obedience to the command of God, unto the efficacious operation of the Holy Ghost in us, unless we intend to be ashamed of the gospel. But this still makes his internal operation to be the efficient, and not his internal testimony to be the formal reason of our faith.

3. It is another question, whether all obligation unto

duty is and must be proportionate unto our own strength without divine assistance, which we deny: and affirm that we are obliged unto many things by virtue of God's command, which we have no power to answer but by virtue of his grace.

4. Where the proposal of the Scripture is made in the way before described, those unto whom it is proposed are obliged to receive it as the word of God, upon the evidence which it gives of itself so to be. Yea every real, true, divine revelation made unto men, or every proposal of the Scripture by Divine Providence, hath that evidence of its being from God accompanying of it, as is sufficient to oblige them unto whom it was made to believe it, on pain of his displeasure. If this were otherwise, then either were God obliged to confirm every particular divine revelation with a miracle (which as to its obligation unto believing wants not its difficulty) which he did not, as in many of the prophets; nor doth at this day at the first proposal of the gospel to the heathen; or else when he requires faith and obedience in such ways as in his wisdom he judgeth meet, that is in the ordinary ministry of the word, they are not obliged thereby, nor is it their sin to refuse a compliance with his will.

5. If this difficulty can be no otherwise avoided, but by affirming that the faith which God requires of us with respect unto his word, is nothing but a natural assent unto it upon rational arguments and considerations which we have an ability for, without any spiritual aid of the Holy Ghost, or respect unto his testimony, as before described; which overthrows all faith, especially that which is divine. I shall rather ten thousand times allow of all the just consequences that can follow on the supposition mentioned, than admit of this relief. But of those consequences this is none, that any unto whom the Scripture is proposed are excepted from an obligation unto believing.

In like manner there is no difficulty in the usual objection which respects particular books of the Scripture, why

we receive them as canonical, and reject others; as namely the Book of Proverbs, and not of Wisdom ; of Ecclesiastes, and not Ecclesiasticus. For,

1. As to the books of the Old Testament, we have the canon of them given us in the New, where it is affirmed, that unto the “ church of the Jews were committed the “ oracles of God:” which both confirms all that we receive, and excludes all that we exclude. And unto the New, there are no pretenders, nor ever were to the least exercise of the faith of any.

2. All books whatever that have either themselves pretended unto a divine original, or have been pleaded by others to be of that extract, have been and may be from themselves, without further help, evicted of falsehood in that pretence. They have all of them hitherto in matter or manner, in plain confessions, or other sufficient evidence, manifested themselves to be of an human original. And much danger is not to be feared from any that for the future shall set forth with the same pretence.

3. We are not bound to refuse the ministry of the church, or the advantages of Providence whereby the Scripture is brought unto us, with the testimonies which either directly or collaterally any one part of it gives unto another. Although the Scripture be to be believed for itself, yet it is not ordinarily to be believed by itself, without the help of other means.

On these suppositions I fear not to affirm that there are on every individual book of the Scripture, particularly those named, those divine characters and *criteria*, which are sufficient to difference them from all other writings whatever, and to testify their divine authority unto the minds and consciences of believers. I say of believers; for we enquire not on what ground unbelievers, or those who do not believe, do believe the word of God, nor yet directly on what outward motives such persons may be induced so to do. But our sole enquiry at present is, what the faith of them who do believe is resolved into. It is not

therefore said, that when our Lord Jesus Christ (for we acknowledge that there is the same reason of the first giving out of divine revelations, as is of the Scripture) came and preached unto the Jews, that those mere words, "I am the light of the world," or the like, had all this evidence in them or with them; for nothing he said of that kind may be separated from its circumstances; but supposing the testimonies given in the Scripture before hand to his person, work, time, and manner of coming, with the evidence of the presence of God with him in the declaration that he made of his doctrine, and himself to be the Messiah, the Jews were bound to believe what he taught, and himself to be the Son of God the Saviour of the world, and so did many of them upon his preaching only, John iv. 42. And in like manner they were bound to believe the doctrine of John Baptist, and to submit unto his institutions although he wrought no miracle, and those who did not, rejected the counsel of God for their good, and perished in their unbelief. But although our Lord Jesus Christ wrought no miracles to prove the Scripture then extant to be the word of God, seeing he wrought them among such only as by whom that was firmly believed; yet the wisdom of God saw it necessary to confirm his personal ministry by them. And without a sense of the power and efficacy of the divine truth of the doctrine proposed, miracles themselves will be despised; so they were by some who were afterwards converted by the preaching of the word, Acts ii. 13. chap. iii. 7, 8. or they will produce only a false faith, or a ravished assent upon an amazement, that will not abide, Acts viii. 13, 21.

APPENDIX.

A Summary representation of the nature and reason of that Faith whereby we believe the Scripture to be the Word of God, with some attestations given unto the substance of what hath been delivered concerning it, shall give a close to this discourse. As to the first part of this design, the things that follow are proposed.

I. Unto the Enquiry, on what grounds, or for what reason we believe the Scripture to be the Word of God, many things are supposed, as on all hands agreed upon, whose demonstration or proof belongs not unto our present work. Such are,

1. The Being of God, and his Self-subsistence, with all the essential properties of his nature.

2. Our relation unto him, and dependence on him, as our Creator, Benefactor, Preserver, Judge, and Rewarder, both as unto things temporal and eternal. Wherefore,

3. The *το γνωστός Θεός*, whatever may be known of God by the light of nature, whatever is manifest in or from the works of creation or providence, and necessary actings of conscience, as to the being, rule and authority of God, is supposed as acknowledged in this Enquiry.

4. That beyond the conduct and guidance of the light of nature, that men may live unto God, believe and put their trust in him, according to their duty, in that obedience which he requireth of them, so as to come unto the enjoyment of him, a supernatural revelation of his mind and will unto them, especially in that condition wherein all mankind are since the entrance of sin, is necessary.

5. That all those unto whom God hath granted divine revelations immediately from himself, for their own use, and that of all other men unto whom they were to be communicated, were infallibly assured that they came from God, and that their minds were no way imposed on in them.

6. That all these divine revelations, so far as they are any way necessary to guide and instruct men in the true knowledge of God, and that obedience which is acceptable unto him, are now contained in the Scriptures, or those books of the Old and New Testament which are

commonly received and owned among all sorts of Christians.

These things I say are supposed unto our present Enquiry, and taken for granted; so as that the reader is not to look for any direct proof of them in the preceding discourse. But on these suppositions it is alledged and proved.

1. That all men unto whom it is duly proposed as such, are bound to believe this Scripture, these books of the Old and New Testament, to be the word of God; that is, to contain and exhibit an immediate, divine, supernatural revelation of his mind and will, so far as in any way needful that they may live unto him; and that nothing is contained in them, but what is of the same divine original.

2. The obligation of this duty of thus believing the Scripture to be the word of God, ariseth partly from the nature of the thing itself, and partly from the especial command of God. For it being that revelation of the will of God, without the knowledge whereof, and assent whereto, we cannot live unto God as we ought, nor come unto the enjoyment of him, it is necessary that we should believe it unto those ends; and God requireth it of us, that so we should do.

3. We cannot thus believe it in a way of duty, but upon a sufficient evidence and prevalent testimony that so it is.

4. There are many cogent arguments, testimonies, and motives to persuade, convince, and satisfy unprejudiced persons, that the Scripture is the word of God, or a divine revelation, and every way sufficient to stop the mouths of gain-sayers, proceeding on such principles of reason, as are owned and approved by the generality of mankind. And arguments of this nature may be taken from almost all considerations of the properties of God, and his government of the world, of our relation unto him, of what belongs unto our present peace, and future happiness.

5. From the arguments and testimonies of this nature, a firm persuasion of mind defensible against all objections, that the Scripture is the word of God, may be attained; and that such, as that those who live not in contradiction unto their own light and reason through the power of their lusts, cannot but judge it their wisdom, duty, and interest to yield obedience unto his will as revealed therein.

6. But yet that persuasion of mind which may be thus

attained, and which resteth wholly upon these arguments and testimonies, is not entirely that faith wherewith we are obliged to believe the Scripture to be the word of God in a way of duty. For it is not to be merely human, how firm soever the persuasions in it may be, but divine and supernatural, of the same kind with that whereby we believe the things themselves contained in the Scripture.

7. We cannot thus believe the Scripture to be the word of God, nor any divine truth therein contained, without the effectual illumination of our minds by the Holy Ghost. And to exclude the consideration of his work herein is to cast the whole enquiry out of the limits of Christian religion.

8. Yet is not this work of the Holy Spirit in the illumination of our minds, whereby we are enabled to believe in a way of duty with faith supernatural and divine, the ground or reason why we do believe, or the evidence whereon we do so, nor is our faith resolved thereinto.

9. Whereas also there are sundry other acts of the Holy Spirit in and upon our minds, establishing this faith against temptations unto the contrary, and further ascertaining us of the divine original of the Scripture, or testifying it unto us; yet are they none of them severally, nor all of them jointly, the formal reason of our faith, nor the ground which we believe upon. Yet are they such as that as without the first work of divine illumination, we cannot believe at all in a due manner; so without his other consequent operations, we cannot believe stedfastly against temptations and oppositions. Wherefore,

10. Those only can believe the Scripture aright to be the word of God in a way of duty, whose minds are enlightened, and who are enabled to believe by the Holy Ghost.

11. Those who believe not are of two sorts, for they are either such as oppose and gainsay the word as a cunningly devised fable; or such as are willing without prejudice to attend unto the consideration of it. The former sort may be resisted, opposed, and rebuked by external arguments, and such moral considerations as vehemently persuade the divine original of the Scripture, and from the same principles may their mouths be stopped as to their cavils and exceptions against it. The other sort are to be led on unto believing by the ministry of the church in the dispensation of the word itself, which is the ordinance of God unto that purpose. But,

12. Neither sort do ever come truly to believe, either merely induced thereunto by force of moral arguments, only, or

upon the authority of that church by whose ministry the Scripture is proposed unto them to be believed. Wherefore,

13. The formal reason of faith divine and supernatural whereby we believe the Scripture to be the word of God in the way of duty, and as it is required of us, is the authority and veracity of God alone, evidencing themselves unto our minds and consciences in and by the Scripture itself. And herein consisteth that divine testimony of the Holy Ghost, which as it is a testimony gives our assent unto the Scriptures the general nature of faith, and as it is a divine testimony gives it the especial nature of faith divine and supernatural.

14. This divine testimony given unto the divine original of the Scripture in and by itself whereinto our faith is ultimately resolved, is evidenced and made known, as by the characters of the infinite perfections of the divine nature that are in it and upon it; so by the authority, power and efficacy over and upon the souls and consciences of men, and the satisfactory excellency of the truths contained therein, wherewith it is accompanied.

15. Wherefore although there be many cogent external arguments whereby a moral stedfast persuasion of the divine authority of the Scriptures may be attained, and it be the principal duty of the true church in all ages to give testimony thereunto, which it hath done successively at all times since first it was entrusted with it; and so although there be many other means whereby we are induced, persuaded, and enabled to believe it, yet is it for its own sake only, efficaciously manifesting itself to be the word of God, or upon the divine testimony that is given in it and by it thereunto, that we believe it to be so with faith divine and supernatural.

Corol. Those who either deny the necessity of an internal subjective work of the Holy Ghost enabling us to believe, or the objective testimony of the Holy Spirit given unto the Scripture in and by itself, or do deny their joint concurrence in and to our believing, do deny all faith properly divine and supernatural.

This being the substance of what is declared and pleaded for in the preceding treatise; to prevent the obloquy of some and confirm the judgment of others, I shall add the suffrage of ancient and modern writers given unto the principal parts of it, and whereon all other things asserted in it do depend.

Clemens Alexandrinus discourses at large unto this pur-

pose, *Stromat. 7.* ‘ We have the Lord himself for the principle or beginning of doctrine, who by the prophets, the gospel, and blessed apostles, in various manners and by divers degrees goeth before us, or leads us unto knowledge.’ (This is that which we lay down as the reason and ground of faith, namely, the authority of the Lord himself instructing us by the Scriptures.) So he adds: ‘ And if any one suppose that he needeth any other principle, the principle will not be kept.’ (That is, if we need any other principle whereinto to resolve our faith, the word of God is no more a principle unto us.) ‘ But he who is faithful from himself is worthy to be believed in his sovereign writing and voice, which as it appeareth is administred by the Lord for the benefit of men. And certainly we use it as a rule of judging for the invention of things. But whatever is judged, is not credible or to be believed until he is judged; and that is no principle which stands in need to be judged.’ The intention of his word is, that God who alone is to be believed for himself, hath given us his word as the rule whereby we are to judge of all things. And this word is so to be believed, as not to be subject unto any other judgment; because if it be so it cannot be either a principle or a rule. And so he proceeds; ‘ Wherefore it is meet that embracing by faith the most sufficient indemonstrable principle, and taking the demonstration of the principle from the principle itself, we are instructed by the voice of the Lord himself unto the acknowledgment of the truth.’ In few words he declares the substance of what we have pleaded for. No more do we maintain in this cause, but what *Clemens* doth here assert; namely, that we believe the Scripture for itself, as that which needeth no antecedent or external demonstration; but all the evidence and demonstration of its divine original is to be taken from itself alone; which yet he further confirms. ‘ For we would not attend or give credit simply to the definitions of men, seeing we have right also to define in contradiction unto them. And seeing it is not sufficient merely to say or assert what appears to be truth, but to beget a belief also of what is spoken, we expect not the testimony of men, but confirm that which is enquired about with the voice of the Lord, which is more full and firm than any demonstration, yea which rather is the only demonstration.—Thus we taking our demonstrations of the Scripture, as assured by faith, as by demonstration.’ And in other places, as *Strom. 4.* he plainly affirms that

the way of Christians was to prove the Scripture by itself, and all other things by the Scripture.

Basilius speaks to the same purpose on Psal. cxv. ‘ Faith which draws the soul to assent above all methods of reasonings, faith which is not the effect of geometrical demonstrations, but of the efficacy of the Spirit.’ The nature, cause, and efficacy of that faith whereby we believe the Scripture to be the word of God, are asserted by him.

Nemodus de Homen. cap. 2. ‘ The doctrine of the divine oracles hath its credibility from itself, because of its divine inspiration.’

The words of *Austin*, though taken notice of by all, yet may here be again reported Confess. lib. ii. cap. 3. ‘ I would hear, I would understand how thou madest the heaven and the earth. Moses wrote this, he wrote it, and is gone hence to thee; for he is not now before me; for if he were, I would hold him, and ask him, and beseech him for thy sake, that he would open these things unto me, and I would apply the ears of my body to the sounds breaking forth from his mouth. But if he should use the Hebrew language, in vain should he affect my sense, for he would not at all touch my mind; if he should speak Latin, I should know what he said; but whence should I know that he spake the truth? and if I should know this also, should I know it of him? Within me, in the habitation of my own thoughts, truth neither in Hebrew, Greek, Latin, nor any barbarous language, without the organs of mouth or tongue, without the noise of syllables, would say, he speaks the truth; and I being immediately assured or certain of it, would say unto that servant of thine, thou speakest truth. Whereas therefore I cannot ask him, I ask thee, O Truth, with which he being filled spake the things that are true; O, my God, I ask of thee; pardon my sins, and thou who gavest unto this thy servant to speak these things, give unto me to understand them.’

That which is most remarkable in these words is, that he plainly affirms that faith would not ensue on the declaration of the prophets themselves if they were present with us, unless there be an internal work of the Holy Spirit upon our minds to enable us, and persuade them thereunto. And indeed he seems to place all assurance of the truth of divine revelations in the inward assurance which God gives us of them by his Spirit; which we have before considered.

‘ The second *Arausian Council* gives full testimony unto

the necessity of the internal grace of the Spirit, that we may believe. Can. 7. *Siquis Evangelicæ prædicationi consentire posse confirmat, absq; Illuminatione & Inspiratione Spiritus Sancti, hæretico fallitur Spiritu.*

To descend unto later times wherein these things have been much disputed, yet the truth hath beamed such light into the eyes of many, as to enforce an acknowledgment from them, when they have examined themselves about it. The words of *Baptista Mantuanus* are remarkable; ‘ I have often thought with myself whence the Scripture itself is so persuasive, from whence it doth so powerfully influence the minds of its hearers, that it inclines or leads them not only to receive an opinion, but surely to believe. This is not to be imputed to the evidence of reasons which it doth not produce, nor unto the industry of art, with words smooth and fit to persuade, which it useth not ; see then if this be not the cause of it, that we are persuaded that it comes from the first truth or verity. But whence are we so persuaded but from itself alone ? as if its own authority should effectually draw us to believe it. But whence I pray hath it this authority ? we saw not God preaching, writing, or teaching of it ; but yet as if we had seen him, we believe and firmly hold, that the things which we read proceeded from the Holy Ghost. It may be this is the reason why we so firmly adhere unto it, that truth is more solid in it, though not more clear than in other writings ; for all truth hath a persuasive power, the greater truth the greater power, and that which is greatest, the greatest efficacy of all. But why then do not all believe the gospel ? Ans. Because all are not drawn of God. But what need is there of any long disputation ? we therefore firmly believe the Scriptures, because we have received a divine inspiration assuring of us.’ And in what sense this is allowed hath been declared in the preceding discourse.

I shall close the whole with the testimony of them, by whom the truth which we assert is most vehemently opposed, when it riseth in opposition unto an especial interest of their own.

Two things there are which are principally excepted against in the doctrine of Protestants, concerning our belief of the Scripture. The first is with respect unto the Holy Spirit as the efficient cause of faith, for whereas they teach that no man can believe the Scripture to be the word of God in a due manner and according unto his duty,

without the real internal aid and operation of the Holy Ghost, however it be proposed unto him, and with what arguments soever the truth of its divine original be confirmed; this is charged on them as an error and a crime. And seconly, whereas they also affirm that there is an inward testimony or witness of the Holy Spirit, whereby he assures and confirms the minds of men in the faith of the Scriptures, with an efficacy exceeding all the persuasive evidence of outward arguments and motives; this also by some they are traduced for. And yet those of the Roman church who are looked on as most averse from that resolution of faith which most protestants acquiesce in, do expressly maintain both these assertions.

The design of *Stapleton, de principiis Fidei, controver. 4.* lib. 8. cap. 1. is to prove, *impossibile esse sine speciali gratia, ac dono fidei divinitus infuso, ceterum verae fidei producere, aut ex veri nominis fide credere.* Which he there proves with sundry arguments, namely, that it is impossible to produce any act of faith, or to believe with faith rightly so called, without special grace, and the divine infusion of the gift of faith. And *Bellarmin* speaks to the same purpose; *De Grat. & lib. Arbit. lib. 6. cap. 3.* ‘The arguments which render the articles of our faith credible, are not such as produce an undoubted faith, unless the mind be divinely assisted.’

Melchior Canus, loc. *Theol. lib. 2. cap. 3.* disputes expressly to this purpose; ‘This is firmly to be held, that human authority, and all the motives before mentioned, nor any other which may be used by him who proposeth the object of the faith to be believed, are not sufficient causes of believing as we are obliged to believe; but there is moreover necessary an internal efficient cause moving us to believe, which is the especial help or aid of God.’ And a little after he speaks yet more plainly. ‘Wherefore all external human persuasions or arguments are not sufficient causes of faith, however the things of faith may be sufficiently proposed by men; there is moreover necessary an internal cause, that is, a certain divine light, inciting to believe, or certain internal eyes to see, given us by the grace of God.’ Yea all other learned men of the same profession do speak to the same purpose.

The other assertion also they do no less comply withal; *Arcanum divini Spiritus Testimonium prorsus necessarium est, ut quis Ecclesie Testimonio ac Judicio circa Scripturarum approbationem credit,* (saith *Stapleton.*) • The secret testi-

mony of the Spirit is altogether necessary that a man may believe the testimony and judgment of the church about the Scriptures.' And the words of *Gregory de Valentia* are remarkable. Tom. 3. in Thom. Disp. 7. qu. 1. punc. 4. sect. 2. Let any man compare these words with those of Calvin, *Institut.* lib. 1. cap. 7. sect. 5. which as I remember I have cited before, and he will know whence the sense of them was taken. 'Whereas (saith he) we have hitherto pleaded arguments for the authority of Christian doctrine, which even by themselves ought to suffice prudent persons to induce their minds to belief, yet I know not whether there be not an argument greater than they all, namely, that those who are truly Christians do find or feel by experience their minds so affected in this matter of faith, that they are moved (and obliged) firmly to believe, neither for any argument that we have used, nor for any of the like sort that can be found out by reason, but for somewhat else which persuades our minds in another manner, and far more effectually than any arguments whatever.' And to shew what he means by this internal argument and persuasion, he affirms elsewhere, that 'it is God himself by the voice of his revelation, and by a certain internal instinct and impulse witnesseth unto the minds of men the truth of Christian doctrine or of the Holy Scripture.'

These few testimonies have I produced amongst the many that might be urged to the same purpose, not to confirm the truth which we have pleaded for, which stands on far surer foundations; but only to obviate prejudices in the minds of some, who being not much conversant in things of this nature, are ready to charge what hath been delivered unto this purpose with singularity.

N. B. Some of the above testimonies were produced, by the Doctor, in Greek, and others in Latin, the translation of which it is now thought only necessary to preserve.

E R R A T A.

In Page 39, Line 1st. for vain their, read vain in their.

68,	3d,	preachings, read <i>preachments</i> .
80,	2d,	all name, read all <i>his</i> name.
83,	28,	their, read <i>the</i> .
91,	14,	communicated us, read communicated <i>to</i> us.
105,	24,	immorality, read <i>immortality</i> .
113,	5.	cause. Reason, read <i>cause</i> , <i>reason</i> .
145,	10,	to tell, read <i>tell</i> .

(Excuse lesser errors.)

Σύνεσις Πνευματική:

OR, THE

CAUSES, WAYS AND MEANS,

OF

UNDERSTANDING THE MIND OF GOD

AS REVEALED IN HIS WORD,

WITH ASSURANCE THEREIN:

AND,

A DECLARATION

OF THE

PERSPICUITY OF THE SCRIPTURES,

WITH THE EXTERNAL MEANS OF THE INTERPRETATION
OF THEM.

BY JOHN OWEN, D. D.

Open thou mine eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of thy law.
Psalm cxix. 18.

Give me understanding, and I shall live.—Verse 144.

GLASGOW:

PRINTED BY W. FALCONER,
FOR STEPHEN YOUNG, PAISLEY.
1801.

P R E F A C E.

I Shall in a few words, give the Reader an account of the occasion and design of the small ensuing discourse. Some while since I published a treatise about the reason of faith, or the grounds whereon we believe the Scripture to be the word of God with that faith which is our duty, and prerrequired unto all other acceptable obedience. But although this be the first fundamental principle of supernatral religion, yet is it not sufficient unto any of the ends thereof, (that we believe the Scripture to be a divine revelation) unless we understand the mind and will of God therein revealed. At least the knowledge and understanding of those things wherein our present duty and future state of blessedness or misery, are immediately concerned, are no less indispensibly necessary unto us, than is the belief of the Scripture to be the word of God. To declare the way and means whereby we may assuredly attain that understanding, is the design of the ensuing discourse; as those whereby we come infallibly to believe the Scripture with faith divine and supernatral, are the subject of the former. My principal scope in both hath been to manifest that such is the abundant goodness, wisdom and grace of God, in granting unto us the inestimable benefit of his word, that no persons whatever, shall or can come short of the advantage intended by it, but through their own sinful negligence and ingratitude, the highest crimes in things of a spiritual and eternal concernment. For he hath given such convincing evidences of the procedure or emanation of the Scripture from himself, by the divine inspiration of the penmen thereof; and so plainly declared his mind and will therein, as unto the faith and obedience which he requires of any or all sorts of persons in their various circumstances, that every one who takes care of his own present and eternal welfare, may and shall in the due use of the means by him appointed, and discharge of the duties by him prescribed unto that end, with a due dependence on the aid and assistances, which he will not withhold from any who diligently seek him, infallibly attain that measure of the knowledge of his mind and will, with full assurance there-

in as will be sufficient to guide him into eternal blessedness. The same measure of divine knowledge is not required in all and every one, that they may live unto God, and come unto the enjoyment of him. The dispensation of God towards mankind in nature, providence, and grace, is an invincible spring of such variety among them, as will not allow a prescription of the same measures of knowledge unto all, to have a consistency with divine wisdom and goodness; and a supposition of it would bring confusion into all the order of things and persons which is of divine constitution. Nor is it pretended that any one man may or can have, in the use of any means whatever, a full comprehension of all divine revelations in this life, nor perhaps of any one of them; or that all men in the use of the same means prescribed unto them, shall have the same conceptions of all things revealed. The Scripture was given for the use of the whole church, and that in all ages, states and conditions, with respect unto that inconceivable variety of circumstances, which all sorts of causes do distribute the whole multitude of them into. Wherefore the wisdom of God therein, hath suited itself unto the instruction of every individual believer, unto the moment of his entrance into eternity. That any one of them, that any society of them should have a perfect comprehension of the entire revelation of God, or a perfect understanding of the whole Scripture, and every part of it, with all that is contained therein, was never required of them in a way of duty, nor ever designed unto them in a way of privilege. For besides that he hath replenished it with unfathomable stores, unsearchable treasures of divine mysteries, wherein we cannot find out the Almighty unto perfection, and hath provided another state for the comprehension of that by sight, which is the object of adoration and admiration in believing; such knowledge is not necessary unto any, that they may lead the life of faith, and discharge the duties thereof in all holy obedience unto God. Yea such a knowledge and comprehension would be inconsistent with that state and condition wherein we are to walk with God, according to the tenor of the covenant of grace, and during the continuance thereof. But the substance of what we plead for is, that such is the wisdom, goodness, and love of God towards mankind, in the grant that he hath made unto them of the revelation of himself, his mind and will in the Scripture, as that no one person doth, or can fail from attaining all that understanding in it and of it,

which is any way needful for his guidance to live unto God in his circumstances and relations, so as to come unto the blessed enjoyment of him, but by the sinful neglect of the means and duties prescribed by him for the attainment of that understanding, and want of a due dependence on those spiritual aids and assistances which he hath prepared for that end. By what ways and means he hath thus provided for the assurance and security of all men, in things of their eternal concernment, and what are those acts of his wisdom, power and grace which he exerts for that end, namely, that they may both believe the Scripture to be his word, and understand his mind revealed therein, both according unto what is required of them in a way of duty, so as in both they may be accepted with him, is the design of this and the other fore-mentioned discourse to declare. And they are both of them principally intended for the use of the ordinary sort of Christians, who know it their concernment to be established in the truth of those things wherein they have been instructed. For they are frequently attacked with those questions, How do you know the Scripture to be the word of God? And what assurance have you that you understand any thing contained in them, seeing all sorts of persons are divided about their sense and meaning, nor do you pretend unto any immediate inspiration to give you assurance? And if on these ensnaring enquiries, they are cast under any doubts or perplexities in their minds, as it often falls out amongst them who have not diligently weighed the principles of their own profession, the next insinuation is, that they ought to betake themselves either to some other present guide, as their own light and reason, or make a complete resignation of themselves and the conduct of their souls, unto the pretended authority and guidance of other men. To give assurance and security unto their minds, that they neither are, nor can be deceived in their belief of the Scriptures to be the word of God, and the understanding of his mind and will therein, so far as their present obedience and eternal happiness are concerned, and that unto this end, they need not be beholden unto any, nor depend on any but God himself, in the use of known and obvious means or duties, is designed in these small treatises. And upon the principles evinced and confirmed in them, I have yet proposed a farther enquiry, namely, What conduct in these times of great contents about the assurance of faith, and the causes of it, every one that takes care of his own salvation,

ought to betake himself unto, that he may not be deceived nor miscarry in the end? And this is designed with especial respect unto the church of Rome, which vehemently pretends unto the sole infallible conduct in these things. But probably the near approach of the daily expected, and earnestly desired hour of my discharge from all farther service in this world, will prevent the accomplishment of that intention. In the continual prospect hereof do I yet live and rejoice, which among other advantages unspeakable, hath already given me an unconcernment in those oppositions, which the passions or interests of men engage them in, of a very near alliance unto, and scarce distinguishable from that which the grave will afford. I have but one thing more to acquaint the reader withall, wherewith I shall close this Preface, and it is the same with that wherewith the Preface unto the former discourse is concluded. This also belongeth unto the second part of my discourse, concerning the dispensation and operations of the Holy Spirit. The first volume on that subject, some years since published, having found good acceptance among them that are godly and learned, both at home and abroad. I have been desired to give out what yet remaineth for the complete accomplishment of what I had designed thereon, in this way of lesser discourses, that may have their use, before the whole be finished, or whether ever it be so or no.

ΣΥΝΕΣΙΣ ΠΝΕΥΜΑΤΙΚΗ.

CHAP. I.

Usurpation of the church of Rome, with reference unto the interpretation of the Scripture, or right understanding of the mind of God therein. Right and ability of all believers as to their own duty herein asserted. Importance of the truth proposed. The main question stated. The principal efficient cause of the understanding which believers have in the mind and will of God as revealed in the Scriptures, the Spirit of God himself. General assertions to be proved. Declared in sundry particulars. Inferences from them.

OUR belief of the Scriptures to be the word of God, or a divine revelation, and our understanding of the mind and will of God as revealed in them, are the two springs of all our interest in Christian religion. From them are all those streams of light and truth derived, whereby our souls are watered, refreshed, and made fruitful unto God. It concerneth us therefore greatly to look well to those springs that they be neither stopped nor defiled, and so rendered useless unto us. Though a man may have pleasant streams running by his habitation, and watering his inheritance, yet if the springs of them be in the power of others, who can either divert their course or poison their waters, on their pleasure he must always depend for the benefit of them.

Thus hath it fallen out in the world in this matter ; so hath the church of Rome endeavoured to deal with all Christians. Their main endeavour is to seize those springs of religion into their own power. The Scripture itself, they tell us, cannot be believed to be the word of God with faith divine, but upon the proposal and testimony of their church ; thereby is one spring secured. And when it is believed so to be, it ought not to be interpreted, it cannot be understood, but according to the mind, judgment, and exposition of the same church ; which in like manner secures the other. And having of old possessed these springs of Christian religion, they have dealt with them according as might be expected from unjust invaders of other men's rights, and *mala fidei possessibus*. So when the Philistines contended for the wells which Abraham and Isaac had digged, when they had got possession of them, they stopped them up. And when the Scribes and Pharisees had gotten the key of knowledge, they would neither enter into the kingdom of God themselves, nor suffer those that would, so to do; as our Saviour tells us. For the one of these springs, which is the letter of the Scripture itself, when it ought to have gone forth like the “waters of the sanctuary,” to refresh the church, and make it fruitful unto God, they partly stopped it up, and partly diverted its course, by shutting it up in an unknown tongue, and debarring the people from the use of it. And in the exercise of their pretended right unto the other spring, or the sole interpretation of the Scripture, they have poisoned the streams, with all manner of errors and delusions, so as that they became not only useless, but noxious and pernicious unto the souls of men. For under the pretence hereof, namely, that their church hath the sole power of interpreting the Scriptures, and cannot err therein, have they obtruded all their errors, with all their abominations in worship and practice, on the minds and consciences of men.

The first of these springs I have in a former discourse on this subject taken out of their hand, so far as we our-

selves are concerned therein, or I have vindicated the just rights of all Christians thereunto, and given them possession thereof. This I did by declaring the true grounds and reasons whereon we do, and whereon any can truly believe the Scripture to be the word of God, with faith divine and supernatural. For besides other advantages wherewith the knowledge of that truth is accompanied; it disposesseth the Romanists of their claim unto this fountain of religion, by evidencing that we do, and ought thus to believe the divine original of the Scripture, without any regard to the testimony or authority of their church.

That which now lieth before us is, the vindication of the right of all believers unto the other spring also, or a right understanding of the mind and will of God, as revealed in the Scripture, suitably unto the duty that God requireth of them in their several capacities and conditions.

What is necessary unto the interpretation of difficult places and passages in the Scripture, what measure of understanding of the mind and will of God as revealed therein, is required of persons in their various conditions, as they are teachers of others, or among the number of them that are to be taught; shall among other things be afterwards spoken unto. My principal design is to manifest, That every believer may in the due use of the means appointed of God for that end, attain unto such a full assurance of understanding in the truth, or all that knowledge of the mind and will of God revealed in the Scripture, which is sufficient to direct him in the life of God, to deliver him from the dangers of ignorance, darkness, and error, and to conduct him unto blessedness. Wherefore, as unto the belief of the Scripture itself, so as unto the understanding, knowledge and faith of the things contained therein, we do not depend on the authoritative interpretation of any church or person whatever. And although ordinary believers are obliged to make diligent and conscientious use of the ministry of the church among other things, as a means appointed of God to lead, guide,

and instruct them in the knowledge of his mind and will revealed in the Scripture, which is the principal end of that ordinance; yet is not their understanding of the truth, their apprehension of it, and faith in it, to rest upon, or to be resolved into their authority, who are not appointed of God to be lords of their faith, but helpers of their joy. And hereon depends all our interest in that great promise, "That we shall be all taught of God." For we are not so, unless we do learn from him, and by him, the things which he hath revealed in his word.

And there is not any truth of greater importance for men to be established in. For unless they have a full assurance of understanding in themselves, unless they hold their persuasion of the sense of Scripture revelations from God alone, if their spiritual judgment of truth and falsehood depend on the authority of men, they will never be able to undergo any suffering for the truth, or to perform any duty unto God in a right manner. The truths of the gospel, and the ways of religious worship, for which any believer may be called to suffer in this world, are such as about whose sense and revelation in the Scripture, there is great difference and controversy among men. And if there be not an assured, yea infallible way and means of communicating unto all believers, a knowledge of the mind and will of God in the Scripture concerning those things so controverted, the grounds whereof are fixed in their own minds, but that they do wholly depend on the expositions and interpretations of other men, be they who they will, they cannot suffer for them either cheerfully or honourably, so as to give glory to God, or to obtain any solid peace and comfort in their own souls. For if a man under his sufferings for his profession, can give himself no other account but this, That what he suffers for, is the truth of God revealed in the Scripture, because such or such whom he hath in veneration or esteem do so affirm, and have so instructed him; or because this is the doctrine of this or that church, the papal or the reformed church, which it hath prescribed unto him; he will have little joy

of his suffering in the end. Yea, there is that which is yet worse in this matter as things are stated at this day in the world. Truth and error are promiscuously persecuted according unto the judgment, interest, and inclinations of them that are in power. Yea, sometimes both truth and error are persecuted in the same place, and at the same time upon errors differing from both. Dissent is grown almost all that is criminal in Christian religion all the world over. But in this state of things, unless we grant men an immediate understanding of their own in the mind and will of God, yea, a full assurance therein, there will be nothing whereby a man who suffers for the most important truths of the gospel, can in his own soul and conscience distinguish himself from those who suffer in giving testimony unto the most pernicious errors; for all outward means of confidence which he hath, they may have also.

It behoveth therefore all those who may possibly be called to suffer for the truth in any season or on any occasion, to assure their minds in this fundamental truth; that they may have in themselves a certain undeceiving understanding of the mind and will of God, as revealed in the Scripture, independent on the authority of any church or persons whatsoever; the use of whose ministry herein we do yet freely and fully allow.

Nor indeed without a supposition hereof can any man perform a duty to God in an acceptable manner, so as that his obedience may be the obedience of faith, nor can upon good grounds die in peace, since the just shall live by his own faith alone.

Wherefore our present enquiry is;

How believers or any men whatever, may attain a right understanding in their own minds of the meaning and sense of the Scriptures as to the doctrine or truths contained in them, in answer unto the design of God, as unto what he would have us know or believe? Or,

How they may attain a right perception of the mind of God in the Scripture, and what he intends in the revela-

tion of it, in opposition unto ignorance, errors, mistakes, and all false apprehensions, and so in a right manner to perform the duties which by them we are instructed in.

In answer unto the enquiry proposed concerning the knowledge and understanding of believers in the mind of God, as revealed in the Scriptures; I shall consider first, the principal efficient cause. And secondly, all the means, internal and external which are appointed of God thereunto.

As to the first of these, or the principal efficient cause of the due knowledge and understanding of the will of God in the Scripture, it is the Holy Spirit of God himself alone. For,

There is an especial work of the Spirit of God on the minds of men, communicating spiritual wisdom, light, and understanding unto them, necessary unto their discerning and apprehending aright the mind of God in his word, and the understanding of the mysteries of heavenly truth contained therein; and I shall add hereunto; That among all the false and foolish imaginations that ever Christian religion was attacked or disturbed withal, there never was any, there is none more pernicious than this, That the mysteries of the gospel are so exposed unto the common reason and understanding of men, as that they may know them and comprehend them in an useful manner, and according to their duty, without the effectual aid and assistance of the Spirit of God.

It is the fondest thing in the world to imagine, that the Holy Ghost doth any way teach us, but in and by our own reasons and understandings. We renounce all enthusiasms in this matter, and plead not for any immediate prophetical inspirations. Those who would prohibit us the use of our reason in the things of religion, would deal with us, as the Philistines did with Sampson, first put out our eyes, and then make us grind in their mill. Whatever we know, be it of what sort it will, we know it in and by the use of our own reason; and what we conceive, we do it by our own understanding. Only the enquiry is, whether there be not an especial work of the

Holy Spirit of God ; enlightening our minds, and enabling our understandings to perceive and apprehend his mind and will as revealed in the Scripture, and without which, we cannot so do. The substance therefore of the ensuing discourse may be reduced unto these heads.

1. That we stand not in need of any new divine afflictions, or immediate prophetical inspirations to enable us to understand the Scripture, or the mind and will of God, as revealed therein. Neither did the prophets or holy penmen of the Scripture learn the mind of God in the revelations made unto them, and by them unto the church, merely from the divine inspiration of them. Those immediate inspirations unto them, were in the stead and place of the written word, and no otherwise. After they did receive them, they were by the same means to inquire into the mind and will of God in them ; as we do it, in and by the written word. 1 Pet. i. 10, 11.

2. That as to the right understanding of the mind of God in the Scripture, or our coming unto the riches of the full assurance of understanding in the acknowledgment of the mystery of God ; we do not, nor need to depend on the authoritative instruction or interpretation of the Scripture by any church whatever, or all of them in the world, though there be great use of the true ministry of the church unto that end.

3. That in the mere exercise of our own natural reason and understanding, with the help of external means, we cannot attain that knowledge of the mind and will of God in the Scripture, of the sense and meaning of the Holy Ghost therein, which is required of us in a way of duty, without the special aid and assistance of the Holy Spirit of God. Wherefore principally it is asserted,

4. That there is an especial work of the Holy Spirit in the supernatural illumination of our minds, needful unto the end proposed ; namely, that we may aright and according unto our duty, understand the mind of God in the Scripture ourselves, or interpret it unto others.

5. That hereby alone is that full assurance of under-

standing in the knowledge of the mystery of God, his truth and grace to be obtained, whereby any man may answer the mind and will of God, or comply with his own duty in all that he may be called to do or suffer in this world, in his especial circumstances. Wherefore,

6. The certainty and assurance that we may have, and ought to have of our right understanding the mind of God in the Scripture; either in general, or as to any especial doctrine, doth not depend upon, is not resolved into any immediate inspiration or enthusiasm; it doth not depend upon, nor is resolved into the authority of any church in the world; nor is it the result of our reason and understanding merely in their natural actings, but as they are elevated, enlightened, guided, conducted by an internal efficacious work of the Spirit of God upon them.

7. That whereas the means of the right interpretation of the Scripture and understanding of the mind of God therein, are of two sorts; first, such as are prescribed unto us in a way of duty, as prayer, meditation on the word itself, and the like; and secondly, disciplinary, in the accommodation of arts and sciences with all kind of learning unto that work; the first sort of them doth entirely depend on a supposition of the spiritual aids mentioned, without which, they are of no use; and the latter is not only consistent therewith, but singularly subservient thereunto; wherefore the nature and use of all these means, shall be afterwards declared.

This being the substance of what is designed in the ensuing discourse, it is evident that the positions before laid down concerning the especial work of the Spirit on the minds of men, in communicating spiritual wisdom, light and knowledge unto them, is in the first place, and principally to be confirmed, as that whereon all the other assertions do absolutely depend.

It is the Scripture itself alone from whence the truth in this matter can be learned; and by which alone what is proposed concerning it must be tried; therefore as unto this first part of this work I shall do little more than plead

the express testimonies thereof. When we come to consider the way and manner of the communication of these spiritual aids unto us, the whole matter will be more fully stated; and such objections as may be laid against our assertion be removed out of the way.

And there are two ends designed in this undertaking.
1. That which the evangelist Luke proposed in his writing the gospel unto Theophilus; namely, "That he might know the certainty of the things wherein he had been instructed," Luke i. 4. When we have been instructed in the truth of the gospel, and do give our assent thereunto, yet it is needful that we should examine the grounds and reasons of what we do believe thereon, that we may have a certainty or full assurance of them. This therefore we shall direct; namely, How a man may come to an un-deceiving, persuasion and full assurance that the things wherein he hath been instructed, and which he knows are true and according to the mind of God, so as that he may thereon be "no more tossed to and fro with every wind of doctrine," by the slight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive.

2. We design to enquire what conduct unto this end a man that takes care of his salvation, and who is convinced that he must give an account of himself unto God, ought in this matter, as to the right understanding of the mind and will of God in the Scripture to betake himself unto. And as I shall shew that there is no safety in depending on enthusiasms, or immediate pretended infallible inspirations; nor on the pretended infallibility of any church: So the holy Spirit of God enlightening our minds in the exercise of our own reason or understanding, and in use of the means appointed of God unto that end, is the only safe guide to bring us unto the full assurance of the mind and will of God, as revealed in the Scripture.

Wherefore the whole foundation of this work lies in these two things. (1.) That there is such an especial work of the Holy Spirit on our minds, enabling them to understand the Scriptures in a right manner, or to know the

mind of God in them. (2.) In shewing what is the especial nature of this work, what are the effects of it upon our minds, and how it differs from all enthusiastical inspirations, and what is the true exercise of our minds in compliance therewith ; and these things we shall first enquire into.

CHAP. II.

The general assertion confirmed with testimonies of the Scripture. Psalm cxix. verse 18. opened at large. Objections answered, 2 Cor. iii. 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. Explained, Isa. xxv. Luke i. 24, 25. Opened, Eph. i. 17, 18, 19. Explained and pleaded, in confirmation of the truth, Hos. xiv. 9.

THE whole of our assertion is comprised in the prayer of the Psalmist ; Psal. cxix. 18. גָּל עֵינֵי וְאַבִּתָּה נֶפְלֹאוּחַ מִתְוֹדָהךְ “Open thou mine eyes that I may behold wonderful things out of thy law.” The same request for the substance of it is repeated sundry times in the same psalm, verse 33, 34, &c. Thus he prayed, that it may be esteemed our duty to pray in “like manner,” is the substance of what we plead for. What we pray for from God, that we have not in, and of ourselves ; as the ancient church constantly pleaded against the Pelagians. And what we pray for according to the mind of God, that we do receive. Wherefore our discerning, our understanding of the wonderful things of the law, is not of ourselves ; it is that which is given us, that which we receive from God.

But that the force of our argument from this testimony, may be the more evident ; the words or terms of it must be explained, that we may see whether they be equivalent unto, or of the same signification with them laid down in our assertion.

1. That which is the object of the understanding prayed

for, that in the knowledge whereof the Psalmist would be illuminated, is תורת. The word signifies instruction; and being referred unto God, it is his teaching or instruction of us by the revelation of himself, the same which we intend by the Scripture. When the books of the Old Testament were compleated, they were for distinction sake, distributed into נגואים תורת—בתחומים—and the law, the psalms and the prophets; Luke xxiv. 44. Under that distribution *Torah* signifies the five books of Moses. But whereas these books of Moses were (as it were) the foundation of all future revelations under the Old Testament, which were given in the explication thereof: all the writings of it are usually called the law, Isa. viii. 20. By the law therefore in this place, the Psalmist understands all the books that were then given unto the church by revelation for the rule of its faith and obedience. And that by the law in the Psalms the written law is intended, is evident from the first of them, wherein he is declared blessed, who “meditate therein day and night;” Pfar. i. 2. Which hath respect unto the command of reading and meditating on the books thereof in that manner, Josh. i. 8. That therefore which is intended by this word, is the entire revelation of the will of God, given unto the church for the rule of its faith and obedience; that is the holy Scripture.

2. In this law there are נפלאות—wonderful things: פלא—signifies to be wonderful, to be hidden, to be great, and high: that which men by the use of reason cannot attain unto, or understand. Hence נפלאות—are things that have such an impression of divine wisdom and power upon them, as that they are justly the object of our admiration. That which is too hard for us; as Deut. xvii. 3. “כִּי יִפְלָא מִמֶּךָ רַכֵּד” If a matter be too hard for thee,” hid from thee. And it is the name whereby the miraculous works of God are expressed; Psalm. lxxvii. 11. lxxviii. 11. Wherefore these wonderful things of the law, are those expressions and effects of divine wisdom in the Scripture, which are above the natural reason and un-

derstandings of men to find out and comprehend. Such are the mysteries of divine truth in the Scripture; especially, because Christ is in them, whose name is פָּلָא, or Wonderful; Isa ix. 6. For all the great and marvellous effects of infinite wisdom meet in him. These things and doctrines God calls —רְבִי חֲדָח — Hos. viii. 12. I have written unto him the “great things of my law;” and they were counted by them —בַּמְנוֹ זֶה—as a strange thing. Because they were wonderful in themselves, they neglected and despised them, as that which was foreign and alien from them, which belonged not unto them. So deal many with the mysteries of the gospel at this day; because they are heavenly, spiritual, in themselves marvellous, hidden, and above the understanding of the natural reason of men; that is, They are נְפָלָות—they reject and despise them as things alien and foreign unto their religion. Wherefore, the wonderful things of the Scripture, are those mysteries of divine truth, wisdom, and grace, that are revealed and contained therein, with their especial respect unto Jesus Christ.

3. Three things are supposed in the words concerning these wonderful things:

1. That they are recorded, laid up or treasured in the law or Scripture, and no where else; so as that from thence alone, are they to be learned and received. “Behold “wonderful things out of the law.” That alone is the sacred παραπατατηκη, or repository of them. There are wondrous things in the works of nature and providence; and much of them is contained in the treasury of reason, wherein it may be discerned. But these are stored in the law only, and no where else.

2. That it is our duty to behold, to discern, to understand them, to have an inspection into them, and our great privilege when we are enabled so to do. This makes the Psalmist pray so frequently, so fervently, that he may have the discerning of them, or come to an acquaintance with them. Those therefore by whom they are neglected, do both despise their duty, and forsake their own mercy.

3. That we are not able of ourselves thus to discern them without divine aid and assistance. For the Psalmist who was wiser than the wisest of us, and who had so earnest a desire after these things, yet would not trust unto his own reason, wisdom, ability, and diligence for the understanding of them, but betakes himself unto God by prayer, acknowledging therein that it is the especial work of God by his Spirit, to enable us to understand his mind and will as revealed in the Scripture.

4. There is expressed in the words the act of God towards us, whereby he enableth us to behold, discern, and understand the wonderful effects of divine wisdom, which are treasured up in the Scripture, which the Psalmist prayeth for. This is called his opening of our eyes, *נַלְעָנִי*: “reveal mine eyes,” uncover, unveil my eyes. There is a light in the word; all truth is light; and sacred truth is sacred light. Yea, the word of God is expressly called light, Psal. xxxvi. 9. Psal. xlvi. 3. Psal. cxix. 105. But there is by nature a covering, a veil on the eyes of the understandings of all men, that they are not able of themselves to behold this light, nor to discern any thing by it in a due manner. With respect hereunto, the Psalmist prays that God would reveal his eyes. *Revelare* is *Velamentum levare*; to reveal is to take off the veil or covering. And this veil is that of our natural darkness, blindness, and ignorance; whereof we have treated elsewhere.

I see not what is wanting unto the explanation or confirmation of the position before laid down. The communication of spiritual light from God, is the peculiar work of the Holy Ghost. He is the immediate author of all spiritual illumination. But hereby alone, or by virtue hereof can we know or understand the mind of God in the Scripture, in such a manner as God requireth us to do; and whosoever hath received the grace of this divine illumination, may do so, so far as he is concerned in point of faith or obedience.

The law is the Scripture, the written word of God.

Therein are wonderful things or mysteries of divine wisdom contained and revealed. To behold these things, is to discern and understand them aright, with respect unto our own faith and obedience. This we cannot do without a supernatural act of the Spirit of God upon our minds, enabling them to discern them, and understand them; these things are in the text, *αναρτιγέντως*. And we hence further argue, that, which is our duty to pray for spiritual supernatural aid, to enable us to do, that of ourselves we are not able to do, without that aid and assistance; at least we may do it by virtue of that aid and assistance; which includes the substance by just consequences of what is pleaded for. But such aid, it is our duty to pray for, that we may understand aright the revelations of the mind and will of God in the Scriptures, the only thing to be proved.

There is but one thing which I can foresee, that may with any pretence of reason be objected unto this testimony of the Psalmist in particular. And this is that he speaks of the times and writings of the Old Testament. Now it is confessed that there was in them a darkness and obscurity, and such as needed new revelations for the understanding of them. But since all things are brought to light by the gospel, there is no need of any special aid or assistance of the Holy Spirit by supernatural illumination for the understanding of them. In answer hereunto I shall consider the discourse of the apostle, wherein he stateth this whole matter; 2 Cor. iii. 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18.
" And not as Moses who put a veil over his face that the
" children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of
" that which is abolished. But their minds were blinded:
" for until this day remaineth the same veil untaken a-
" way, in the reading of the Old Testament, which is done
" away in Christ. Nevertheless, when it shall turn unto
" the Lord, (or they be turned unto the Lord) the veil
" shall be taken away. Now the Lord is that Spirit;
" and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.
" But we all with open face behold as in a glafs the glory
" of the Lord."

When Moses had received the revelation of the law from God, "his face shone," Exod. xxxiv. 29. For there were wonderful things contained in that revelation with respect unto Jesus Christ; he was in them all, and the end of them all. The whole ministry of Moses was but a testimony given unto the things that were "afterwards to be" "spoken" concerning him, as the apostle declares; Heb. iii. 5.

On the receipt of this revelation "his face shone;" because there was a light, a lustre, a glory in the things revealed unto him; and by them reflected on his ministry, which was so represented. Nevertheless, this light did not shine immediately into the hearts and minds of the people. They did not see or discern the glorious and wonderful things that were in the law. For there was a double veil or covering that hindered them. One that was put on Moses' face; another that was on their own hearts. Some dark apprehensions and glances of light they had; but they could not look steadfastly unto the end of that which was to be abolished; they could not comprehend the truth concerning Christ, which was the substance and end of the law.

The first veil, that which was on the face of Moses, was the obscurity of the instructions given them as wrapt up in types, shadows, and dark parables. This they could not see through as clearly to discern the wonderful things contained in and under them. This veil is quite taken off, in the revelation, or doctrine of the gospel, wherein life and immortality are brought to light, and the wonderful things of the mystery of God in Christ are fully declared, and plainly expressed. Herein therefore it is acknowledged, that there is a great difference between those under the Old Testament, and those under the New.

But, saith the apostle, "there is another veil;" a "veil upon the heart." And hereof he declareth two things; (1.) That this veil is "done away only in Christ;" and (2.) That therefore it is not taken away from any, but those who are "converted unto God. This is the covering of

ignorance, darkness, blindness, that is on men by nature. The former veil is taken away by the doctrine of the gospel. This latter is to be removed only by an effectual work of the Spirit of Christ, in the conversion of the souls of men unto God.

And two things do ensue on the removal of this double veil. 1. That as unto the doctrine itself concerning the mystery of God in Christ ; it is no more represented unto us in types, shadows, and dark parables ; but in the clear glafs of the gospel, whereon the glory of Christ is reflected. Hereby the veil is taken off from the face of Moses. 2. That we have *προσωπόν ανακεντητικόν*, an open uncovered face : or, as the Syriac reads it, a “revealed eye,” whereby we are enabled to discern the wonderful mysteries of God so revealed. This ensues on the taking away of the second veil of darkness and blindness, which is on the hearts of all by nature.

The removal and destruction of this double veil by the Spirit and grace of the gospel, is that which is prophesied of Isa. xxv. 7. “ And he shall destroy in this mountain the face,” *הַלְּטוֹת תָּלֵת* the “covering, covered,” or the “double veil, that is on the face of all people ;” and *הַמִּסְכָּה הַנּוּבָחָה*, “the veil veiled over all nations.”

This being the design of the discourse of the apostle ; it is evident that although there be a difference between them under the Old Testament, and us, as to the veil that was on the face of Moses, which is destroyed and removed by the doctrine of the gospel ; yet there is none, as to the veil which is on the hearts of all by nature, which must be removed by the Holy Spirit, or we cannot with open face behold the glory of the Lord ; the thing which the Psalmist prayeth for in the place insisted on. That is, that God by his Spirit would more and more renew his mind, and take away his natural darkness and ignorance, that he might be able to behold, perceive and understand the mind of God as revealed in the Scripture. And if any shall suppose or say, that for their parts they need no such especial aid and assistance to enable them to

understand the mind of God in the Scripture, which is sufficiently exposed to the common reason of all mankind; I shall only say at present; I am afraid they do not understand those places of Scripture, where this aid and assistance is so expressly affirmed to be necessary thereunto.

But the meaning of the Psalmist will the better appear, if we consider the communication of the grace which he prayed for unto others. This is expressed, Luke xxiv. 45. “Then opened he their understandings, that they might understand the Scriptures.” A needless work if some men may be believed. But our Lord Jesus Christ thought not so. The truths concerning him were revealed in the Scripture, that is of the law and the prophets, and the Psalms, v. 44. These they read, these they were instructed in, these were preached unto them every day. And probably they were as well skilled in the literal sense of Scripture propositions, as those who pretend highest amongst us, so to be. Howbeit they could not understand those wonderful things in a way of duty, and as they ought to do, until the Lord Christ opened their understandings. There was needful unto them an immediate gracious act of his divine power on their minds to enable them thereunto. And I cannot yet much value those men’s understanding of the Scripture, whose understandings are not opened by the Spirit of Christ.

If we need the openings of our understandings by an act of the power and grace of Christ, that we may understand the Scriptures, then without it we cannot so do, namely, so as to believe and yield obedience according unto our duty; the consequence is evident; for if we could, there is no need of this act of Christ towards these disciples, who were not destitute of any rational abilities, required in us thereunto. And the act of Christ in opening their understandings, is openly distinguished from the proposition of the doctrine of the Scripture unto them. This was made two ways: first, in the Scripture itself: secondly, in the oral discourse of our Saviour upon it. Distinct from both these is that act of his whereby he o-

pened their understandings, that they might understand the Scripture. Wherefore nothing but a real internal act of grace in the illumination of their minds can be intended thereby, the nature whereof shall be further explained afterwards.

But there is an eminent place that must be pleaded distinctly to this purpose. Ephes. i. 17, 18, 19. "That the "God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory may "give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in "the knowledge of him: The eyes of your understand- "ings being enlightened, that you may know what is "the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the "glory of the inheritance in the saints, and what is the "exceeding greatness of his power to usward who believe."

This is the whole of what we would assert, and nothing else.

And if men would acquiesce by faith in what is here declared, we need to plead this cause no farther. For the words and expressions of the truth here used are more emphatical unto a spiritual understanding, than any we can find out. And I shall only shew in the opening of them, how our position and sense is contained in them. And 1. What the apostle doth here for others, it is unquestionably our duty to do for ourselves. We are then to pray, that God would enable us by his Spirit to know and understand his mind and will, as revealed in the Scripture. This therefore without especial aid and assistance from him by his Spirit, we cannot do. And the aid he gives us consists in the effectual illumination of our minds, or the enlightening of the eyes of our understandings. These things are plain and not liable as I suppose to any exception. And these are all we plead for. Let them be granted without any other distinctions, or limitations, but what the Scripture will justify, and there is an end of this difference. But some particular passages in the words may be considered for the better understanding, and farther confirmation of the truth contained therin.

1. It is a revelation that the apostle prays for; or a

spirit of revelation to be given unto them. This greatly offends some at first hearing, but wholly without cause. For he understands not new immediate external revelation from God. Believers are not directed to look after such revelations for their guide: Ever since the Scripture was written, the generality of the church was obliged to attend thereunto alone, as their only rule of faith and obedience. And although God reserved unto himself a liberty under the Old Testament, and until the compleating of all the books of the New, to add new revelations as he pleased; yet always bound up the faith and obedience of the present church, unto what he had already revealed. And he hath now by the Spirit of his Son, put an end unto all expectation of any new, of any other revelations, wherein the faith or obedience of the church should be concerned. Wherein, at least we take it for granted in this enquiry; that infallible inspirations in the discovery of things not before revealed, are ceased in the church. Nor do the Papists extend their infallibility thereunto, but only unto things already revealed in the Scripture or tradition. What some among ourselves do ascribe of this nature unto their light I do not well know, nor shall now enquire.

But there is an internal subjective revelation, whereby no new things are revealed unto our minds, or are not outwardly revealed anew, but our minds are enabled to discern the things that are revealed already. All the things here mentioned by the apostle, which he desires they might understand, were already revealed in the Scriptures of the Old Testament and the New that were then written, and the infallible declaration of the gospel in the preaching of the apostles. But there was a new work of revelation required, in, and unto every person, that would understand and comprehend these things in a due manner. For *απωνελυσις* or revelation, is the discovery of any thing, whether by the proposal of it unto us, or the enabling of us to discern it when it is so proposed. In the first sense it is useful, Rom. xvi. 25. 2 Cor. xii. 1, 7. Gal.

i. 12. chap. ii. 2. In the latter, Luke ii. 32. Ephes. i. 11. As when God opened the eyes of the servant of Elisha on the prayer of his master, to see the horses and chariots of fire that were round about him, 2 Kings i. 6, 17. They were not brought thither by the opening of his eyes; only he was enabled to discern them which before he could not do. Or as when any one maketh use of a telescope to behold things afar off, no object is presented unto him, but what is really in the same place before, only his visive faculty is assisted to discern them at that distance, which without that assistance it could not reach unto. And the Holy Spirit is here called the spirit of revelation, casually; as he is the author or principal efficient cause of it: So in his communication unto the Lord Christ himself, he is called the “Spirit of wisdom and understanding; the “Spirit of counsel and might; the Spirit of knowledge, “and of the fear of the Lord; that should make him of “quick understanding in the fear of the Lord,” Isa. xi. 2, 3.

52. What the Psalmist in the place before insisted on calleth in general נִזְנָתָן wonderful things, the apostle expresseth in particular, and distributes them under sundry heads as they were more clearly revealed in the gospel. Such are the hope of God's calling, the riches of his glory, and the exceeding greatness of his power in them that do believe. These are some of the principal and most important mysteries of the gospel. No other understanding can we have of these things, but only as they are revealed therein, or of the revelation of them. And in the manner of his expression he declares these things to be wonderful, as the Psalmist speaks. For there is in them οὐαστή της δόξης, the riches of glory; which is beyond our comprehension. So he expressly affirms, that it is αναζητησας, chap. iii. 8. past all investigation or search; the same word that he useth to set forth the ways of God, when his design is to declare them wonderful, or the object of our admiration, Rom. xi. 33. “O the depth of the riches of “the wisdom and knowledge of God, how unsearchable

"are his ways, and his judgments past finding out," and there is in them, *υπερβαλλον μυστηριον* an exceeding or inexpressible greatness of power.

Such are the things that are proposed unto us in the Scripture. And the principal reason why some men judge it so easy a matter to understand and comprehend by the innate abilities of their own minds, the revelations that are made in the word of God unto us; is, because they do not apprehend that there is any thing wonderful, or truly great and glorious in them. And therefore because they cannot raise their minds unto a comprehension of these mysteries as they are in themselves; they corrupt and debase them; to suit them unto their own low carnal apprehensions, which is the principle that works effectually in the whole of Socinianism. For grant that there are such wonderful things, such mysteries in the gospel as we plead, and the men of that persuasion will not deny, but that our minds do stand in need of an heavenly assistance to comprehend them aright. For they deny them for no other reason, but because their reason cannot comprehend them.

3. Concerning these things so revealed in the word; the apostle prays for these Ephesians, that they might know them; as also he expresseth the way whereby alone they might be enabled so to do. *Εἰς τοὺς ἀδελφους*; that they might have a sight, perception or understanding of them. This he denies a natural man to have, or that he can have; He cannot know them, 1 Cor ii. 14. It is true, it may be said, he cannot know them unless they are clearly and fairly proposed unto him; no, nor then neither, by the light and power of his own natural faculties. He cannot do so by the use of any outward means alone. It is futile to imagine that the apostle intends only, that a natural man cannot know things that are never proposed unto him, which is neither weakness, nor discommendation. For neither can the spiritual man so know any thing.

Because it is thus with men by nature, therefore doth

the apostle so earnestly pray, that these Ephesians might be enabled to understand and know these things, and he doth it with an unusual solemnity, invoking the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of Glory: which argues both a great intention of spirit in him, and great weight laid upon the matter of his request.

But what reason is there for this earnestness? What is wanting unto these Ephesians? what would he yet have for them? were they not rational men that had their eyes in their heads as well as others? nay, were not many of them learned men and skilled in all the curious arts of those days? for here it was, that so many upon their first conversion burnt their books to the value of fifty thousand pieces of silver; Acts. xix. 19. Probably they were many of them very knowing in the new and old philosophy. Had they not the Scripture also; that is, all the books of the Old Testament, and those of the New which were then written? Did not the apostle and others preach the doctrine of the gospel unto them, and therein the things which he here mentioneth? He declareth, and expressly testifieth that he did, Acts xx. 20, 27. Speaking unto these very persons, that is, the leaders of them; he saith, "I "have kept back nothing which was profitable unto you, "but declared unto you all the counsel of God;" namely, what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of his glory, and what the greatness of his power: were not these things sufficiently revealed, and clearly proposed unto them? if they were not, it was because the apostle could not so reveal and propose them, or because he would not. If he could not, then he prays, that that might be revealed unto them which was not so to him; or that they might learn what he could not teach them, which is foolish and impious to imagine. If he would not, then he prays, that they may know, that which he would not teach them, which he could easily have so done; which is equally foolish to suppose. What therefore do they yet lack? What is yet further needful, that they might know and understand these things? For we must

know, that we understand no more of the mind of God in the revelations that he makes unto us, than we understand of the things themselves that are revealed by him.

I am persuaded, that these Ephesians were generally as wise, and some of them as learned as any in our days, let them have what conceit of themselves they please. Yet grant some of ours but thus much, that they have their wits about them, and the use of their reason; and let them have the things of the gospel, or the doctrines of it rationally proposed unto them, as they are in the Scripture, and they defy the world to think that they yet want any thing to enable them to know, and rightly to understand them. To fancy any thing else to be necessary hereunto is fanatical madness. For what would men have? what should ayle them? Are not the doctrines of the gospel highly rational? are not the things of it eminently suited unto the reason of mankind? are not the books of the Scripture written in a style and language intelligible? Is there any thing more required unto the understanding of the mind of any author, but to conceive the grammatical sense of the words that he useth, and the nature of his propositions and arguings? And although St. Paul, as some say, be one of the obscurest writers they ever met with; yet surely by these means some good shift may be made with his writings also.. It is therefore canting and nonsense, a reproach to reason and Christian religion itself, to think that this is not enough to enable men to understand the mind of God in the Scriptures.

Well be it so at present unto the highly rational abilities of some persons; it cannot be denied, but that the apostle judged it necessary, that these Ephesians should have the special aid of the Spirit of God unto this end, which he prayeth for. And we may be excused if we dare not think ourselves better than they? nor to have a sufficiency of learning, wisdom, and reason above others, or less to need prayers of this nature than they did. And we find that the apostle reneweth his prayer for them again unto the same purpose, with great fervency, chap. iii. ver. 14,

15, 16, 17, 18, 19. All the difference ariseth from hence, that the apostle judgeth, that over and above the utmost exercise of our natural faculties and abilities, in the use of outward means, that we may know the mind of God in the Scripture, wherein these Ephesians were not wanting; it is necessary that the eyes of our understanding should be spiritually opened and enlightened; but other men it seemis think not so.

But yet if men should be allowed to suppose, that our minds were no way vitiated, depraved, or darkened by the fall, which supposition is the sole foundation of these assertions; yet it is most irrational to imagine, that we can comprehend and understand the mysteries of the gospel without especial spiritual illumination. For the original light and abilities of our minds was not suited or prepared for the receiving and understanding of them. For neither their being nor revelation was consistent with the state of integrity. Wherefore although our minds shoud be allowed to be as wise and perspicacious with respect unto that natural knowledge of God and all that belongs unto it, which was proposed unto us, or necessary for us in the state of nature; yet would it not follow, that we are able to discern the mysteries of grace when proposed unto us. The truth is, if our minds be not corrupted or depraved, there is no need of the gospel nor its grace; and if they are, we cannot understand the mind of God therein, without especial illumination.

But it may be said, that these things are consistent. For notwithstanding men's rational abilities, and the use of means; yet it is meet that they should both pray for themselves, and that others whose duty it is, should pray for them also. It is so, that they may be diligent in their enquiries, and obtain the blessing of God upon their diligence. But this doth not prove at all, that they are not able of themselves to apprehend and know the mind and things of God in the Scripture, or that any thing is wanting in them, or to them, which is absolutely necessary thereunto.

I answer, That on these suppositions; there is indeed nothing wanting, but that which the apostle moreover prayeth for, which is none of them. And if that be not also requisite unto this end, his prayer is vain and useless. That men be diligent in the discharge of their duty herein, and that they may have the especial blessing of God thereon, are here supposed, and we shall speak unto them afterwards. These are not the things that the apostle here prayeth for; but that God would give them the "spirit of wisdom and revelation to enlighten the eyes of their understandings," that they may know them as shall be immediately declared. And indeed I understand not how this prayer can be suited unto the principles of any who deny the necessity of this internal spiritual aid.

For they cannot but think it strange to pray for a spirit of wisdom and revelation to be given unto their whole congregations, which were a dangerous way to make them wiser than their teachers. And for themselves, using diligence, and praying for a blessing in their diligence, they disavow any farther concernment in this matter.

4. The thing in especial prayed for in order unto the end proposed, is, that the "eyes of our understandings" "may be enlightened." This is the same which the Psalmist prayeth for in the place before insisted on, that God would open his eyes. And it is the internal work of illumination that is intended. Now although the main force of the argument depends on these words, yet shall I not insist here upon them; because I must speak somewhat more in particular unto the nature of this work afterwards. Besides what is that darkness which is here supposed to be on our minds or understandings, what is its nature, efficacy and power, how it is taken away and removed; what is the nature of that spiritual light which is communicated unto us, in and for the removal thereof, I have at large elsewhere declared. All that at present I shall observe from these words, is in general; that there is an especial work of the Spirit of God in the enlightening the eyes of our understandings, necessary unto our

discerning of the mysteries of the gospel in a due manner; which was to be proved.

5. What is declared concerning the author of this work in us, or the principal efficient cause of it, doth farther confirm the same truth. And this is the Holy Spirit; "That he would give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation." That the Holy Spirit is the immediate author of all supernatural effects and operations in us, hath been elsewhere proved at large. And what he is promised or given in the gospel so to effect, is not any thing that is in our own power. Wherefore the ascription of the communication of this ability unto the Holy Ghost, is a sufficient evidence that we want it in ourselves. And all things here affirmed concerning the manner of his communication unto us, and his properties as communicated, do evidence the nature, and evince the truth of the work ascribed unto him. As for the first, it is by the grant, donation, or free gift of God the Father, ver. 17. "That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory would give unto you." God is called, the "King of glory," Psal. xxiv. 7, 8. and the "God of glory." Acts vii. 2. with respect unto his own glorious majesty. But he is the Father of glory, as he is the eternal spring and cause of all glory unto the church. And these titles are prefixed unto this grant or the request of it, the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, to intimate that it proceeds from his relation unto us in Christ, with that love and bounty wherein he is the cause of all grace and glory unto us. Wherefore receiving this spirit by free donation, as we do, Luke. xi. 13. All that we receive from him and by him, we have it by the way of free gift or donation also. Therefore is this ability of understanding the Scripture, and the mysteries of the truth contained therein, a mere free gift of God, which he be-stows on whom he will. So our Saviour told his disciples, "Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of God, but to them (to others) it is not given," Mat. xiii. 11. who yet heard his words, and understood the literal sense of

the propositions used by him as well as the disciples did. Whoever therefore hath this ability to know the mysteries of the gospel, he hath it by free gift, or donation from God. He hath received it, and may not boast as if it were from himself, and that he had not received it, as the apostle speaks, 1 Cor. iv. 7. Again, the properties ascribed unto him, as thus communicated for this end, are wisdom, and revelation.

1. He is the Spirit of wisdom. So in the communication of him in all fulness unto the Lord Jesus Christ, the head of the church, he is called the "Spirit of wisdom and "understanding," Isa. xi. 2. and that because he was to make him of "quick understanding in the fear of the "Lord," ver. 3. He is a Spirit of wisdom essentially in himself: and casually or efficiently unto others. And these things do mutually demonstrate each other. That he is the cause of all wisdom in others, is a demonstration that he is essentially wise in himself. For he that planted the ear, shall he not hear? He that formed the eye, shall he not see? And because he is essentially wise, he must be the author of all wisdom unto others. For all good must come from that which is infinitely, eternally, unchangeably so, James i. 17. He is therefore called the Spirit of wisdom on both these accounts; as he is essentially so in himself, and as he is the efficient cause of all wisdom unto others. And it is in the latter way immediately that he is here so termed. And this property is peculiarly ascribed unto him as thus given unto us, to open our eyes, with respect unto the work which he is to do. For wisdom is required hereunto. That wisdom which may deliver us from being really fools ourselves, and from judging the things of God to be folly.

'There is a wisdom required hereunto: "Who is wise, "and he shall understand these things; prudent and he "shall know them; for the ways of the Lord are right, "and the just shall walk in them; but the transgressors "shall fall therein;" Hos. xiv. 9. Want of this wisdom is the cause that wicked men take offence at, and dislike

the ways of God, because they do not spiritually understand them, and so cast themselves into destruction. And it is of the same things that the prophet affirms, that none “of the wicked shall understand, but the wise shall understand;” Dan. xii. 10. And it is called, the “wisdom of the just;” Luke i. 17.

This wisdom is not in us by nature. Men are naturally wise in their own conceit; which if continued in, is an hopeless frame of mind, Prov. xxvi. 12. And in nothing doth it more evidence itself, than in apprehensions of their own ability to comprehend spiritual things, and in their contempt of what they do not so, as folly, 1 Cor. i. 18, 23. And with respect hereunto, doth the apostle give that advice unto us, as our duty; “Let no man deceive himself, if any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise,” 1 Cor. iii. 18. This is a matter wherein men are very apt to deceive themselves; even to conceit themselves wise, and to trust thereunto in the things of God, whereof alone he there treats. Whereas therefore the especial promise of God is to teach the meek and the humble, there is nothing that sets men at a greater distance from divine instruction, than a proud conceit of their own wisdom, wit, parts and abilities. Wherefore this wisdom which is the daughter of natural darkness, and the mother of proud spiritual ignorance, the spirit of wisdom freeth the minds of believers from, in the way that shall be afterwards declared; and therein is he unto us as a spirit of wisdom. Moreover, he gives us that wisdom which is from above, which we are directed to ask of God, James i. 5. Without this wisdom which he works in us, no man can understand the wisdom of God in the mystery of the gospel; who so is thus made wise, shall understand these things, and none else. There is therefore a gift of spiritual wisdom and understanding necessary hereunto, that we may discern the wonderful things that are in the word of God. To whom this is not given, they know not the mysteries of the kingdom of Heaven. Let men please or pride

themselves whilst they will in their own wisdom and learning, and explode the consideration of these things in our enquiries after the mind of God, the meanest believer who hath received this wisdom from above, according unto the measure of the gift of Christ, knoweth more of the mind of God in a due manner than they do.

When our Lord Jesus Christ affirmed that he came into the world, "that they which see not, might see," or to communicate spiritual saving light into the minds of men, the Pharisees who had great apprehensions of their own wisdom and understanding in the law, replied with scorn, "And are we blind also?" John ix 33, 40. I proved no otherwise, and that to their eternal ruin, yet do I not judge all them to be practically blind, who do not doctrinally own the receiving of this wisdom and light from above. For although we make not ourselves to differ from others, nor have any thing in a way of spiritual ability, but what we have received, yet are some apt to glory as if they had not received, as the apostle intimates, 1 Cor. iv. 7. Wherefore the Holy Spirit as given unto us, is said to be a "Spirit of wisdom," because he maketh us wise, or worketh wisdom in us. This wisdom we have not of ourselves; for to suppose it, renders the word of God of none effect. And this spiritual wisdom, thus to be bestowed upon us, thus to be wrought in us, is necessary that we may know the mysteries of the gospel, or understand the mind of God therein, which is all that we plead for.

I have insisted the longer upon this testimony, because the whole of what we assert in general, in the nature, causes, and effects of it, is fully declared therein. And this was the way whereby they of old came to understand divine revelations, or the mind of God as revealed in the Scripture. If others who seem to scorn all mention of the teaching of the Holy Ghost, have found out a course more expedite unto the same end, it is what I understand not, nor do desire to participate in.

C H A P. III.

Other Testimonies pleaded in the confirmation of the same truth, John xvi. 13. *opened.* How far all true believers are infallibly led into all truth, declared. And the manner how they are so, 1 John ii. 20, 27. explained. What assurance of the truth they have who are taught of God. Eph. i. 5, 6. John xxx. 22. John vi. 45. Practical truths inferred from the assertion proved.

THERE are yet other testimonies which may be pleaded unto the same purpose. For unto this end is the Holy Ghost promised unto all believers. John xvi. 13. "When the Spirit of truth is come, he shall guide you into all truth."

The Holy Spirit is called the "Spirit of truth," principally on the same account as God absolutely is, called "the God of truth." He is so essentially. He is the first, absolute, divine, eternal Verity; so he is originally called the Holy Spirit on the account of his essential holiness. But it is not on that account solely that he is here called the Spirit of truth. He is so as he is the revealer of all divine supernatural truth unto the church. As he is also called the Holy Spirit, as he is author of all holiness in others; therefore is he here promised unto the church as it is his work to "lead us unto all truth."

And two things are considerable in this promise; (1.) What is intended by "all truth." (2.) How the Holy Spirit guides or leads us into it.

i. With respect unto the object, it is not all truth absolutely that is intended. There is truth in things natural, civil, and stories of things that are past; nothing of this nature is comprised in this promise. We see believers of all sorts as ignorant of, as unacquainted with many of these things, as any other sort of men whatever. Yet doth not one word of the promise of Christ fall unto the ground. Wherefore all that truth, or all truth of that

nature whereof our Saviour there speaketh, is alone intended. The mysteries of the gospel, of the kingdom of heaven, the counsel of God about the salvation of the church by Christ, and concerning their faith and obedience, are the truth which he is promised to guide us into. This the apostle calleth, "All the counsel of God," Acts xx. 27. namely, which respects all the ends of our faith and obedience, ver. 21.

2. It admits of a limitation with respect unto the diversity of subjects, or the persons unto whom this truth is to be communicated. They are not all of them as to the degrees of light and knowledge equally to be led into all truth. Every one unto whom he is thus promised, shall be so far led into the knowledge of it, as is necessary unto his own estate and condition, his duty and his work. For unto "every one of us is given grace according unto the measure of the gift of Christ," Eph. iv. 7. It is Christ alone, who in the free gift of all grace, assigns the measures wherein every one shall be made partaker of it. In his sovereign will he hath allotted the measures of grace, light and knowledge, unto all the members of the church. And there is no less difference in these measures, than in the knowledge of the most glorious apostle, and that of the meanest believer in the world. The duty, work, and obedience of every one, is the rule of the measure of his receiving, these gifts of necessary unto him; none shall receive any thing that he is not to use and improve in a way of duty.

2. Our second enquiry is, how the Spirit doth thus lead us into all truth. The external revelation of all truth is herein supposed. This he is promised to instruct us in the knowledge of, in a spiritual manner, whereby I understand no more, but so as it is required of us in a way of duty. To clear the truth hereof, some things must be observed. As,

1. The promises concerning the mission of the Holy Spirit in these chapters of the gospel, xiv. xv. xvi. are not to be confined unto the apostles, nor unto the first age

or ages of the church. To do so is expressly contradictory unto the discourse and whole design of our Lord Jesus Christ unto that purpose. For he promiseth him in opposition unto his own temporary abode in the world ; namely, that this of the Spirit should be for ever, chap. xiv. 16. that is *εως τον ουτελεστας τον αιωνον*, Math. xxviii. 20. unto the consummation of the whole state of the church here below. And to suppose the contrary, is to overthrow the foundation of all truth and comfort in the church. For their preservation in the one, and the administration of the other unto them, in Christ, none shall want any thing that depend on the accomplishment of this promise alone. And so also do all the benefits of the intercession of Christ, which are no otherwise communicated unto us, but by the Holy Spirit, as given in pursuit of this promise. For what herein he prayed for his apostles, he prayed for “all them that should believe in him through this word “unto the end of the world,” John xvii.

2. It is granted, that sundry things in the promises of the Holy Ghost were peculiar unto the apostles, and had their accomplishment on the day of Pentecost, when he descended on them in that glorious visible manner, Acts ii. 1, 2, 3, 4. For as they were commanded by our Saviour to wait for this his coming before they engaged in the discharge of that office whereunto he had called them, Acts i. 4. so now they were fully-empowered and enabled unto all that belonged thereunto. But their peculiar interest in these promises, respected only things that were peculiar unto their office ; such as that mentioned in this place is not.

3. It is not an external guidance into the truth by the objective revelation of it, that is intended ; for such revelations are not granted unto all believers unto whom this promise is made, nor are they to look for them. And the revelation of truth in the ministerial proposal of it, is common unto all the world unto whom the word is preached, and so is not the subject of an especial promise.

4. Wherefore it is the internal teaching of the Holy

Ghost giving an understanding of the mind of God, of all sacred truths as revealed, that is intended. For (1) It is the same with that other promise, we “ shall be all taught of God.” For we are thus taught of God by the Spirit’s leading us into all truth, and no otherwise. (2.) This the word enforceth; the Spirit of truth, *οδηγεῖται ὑπερ*, shall lead and guide you in the right way to the knowledge of the truth. So when Philip asked the eunuch whether he understood the things which he read out of the prophet Isaiah, he replieth, “ how can I? εἰς μὲν τις οδηγεῖται μὲν, A&ts “ viii. 31. unless one lead me” to the sense of it; that is by his interpretation give me an understanding of it. Thus the Holy Spirit leads us into all truth by giving us that understanding of it, which of ourselves we are not able to attain. And other interpretations the words will not admit. It is therefore his work to give us an useful saving understanding of all sacred truth, or the mind of God as revealed in the Scripture. All spiritual divine supernatural truth is revealed in the Scripture. Herein all are agreed. The knowledge, the right understanding of this truth as so revealed, is the duty of all, according unto the means which they enjoy, and the duties that are required of them. Neither can this be denied. Unto this end that they may do so, the Holy Spirit is here promised unto them that do believe. His divine aid and assistance is therefore necessary hereunto. And this we are to pray for, as it is promised. Wherefore of ourselves, without his especial assistance and guidance, we cannot attain a due knowledge of, and understanding in the truth revealed in the Scripture. As unto the especial nature of this assistance it shall be spoken unto afterwards.

This is again affirmed concerning all believers, 1 John ii. 20, 27. “ You have an unction from the Holy One, “ and you know all things; the anointing which you have “ received of him abideth in you; and ye need not that “ any man teach you, but as the same anointing teacheth “ you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie; and even “ as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in it.”

That by the unction and anointing in this place the Spirit of God and his work, with respect unto the end mentioned, are intended, is not questioned by any that are conversant about these things with sobriety. And it is plain in the text. For (1.) That the Holy Spirit in his especial operations, is called an unction, or is said to anoint us, is evident in many places of the Scripture. See Heb. i. 9, 2 Cor. i. 22, 23. Neither is a spiritual unction ascribed unto any thing else in the whole Scripture. (2.) That expression which you have from the Holy One (Acts iii. 14. Rev. iii. 7.) that is Jesus Christ, doth expressly answer unto the promise of Christ, to send his Holy Spirit unto us, and that for the end here mentioned, namely to teach us, and lead us into all truth; whence he is called "the Spirit of the Lord" or of Christ, 2 Cor. iii. 17, 18. Ephes. iii. 16. Phil. i. 19, &c. That also of his abiding in us, is nothing but an expression of the same promise of Christ, that he shall "abide with us for ever," John xiv. 16. (4.) The work here assigned unto this unction, is expressly assigned unto the Holy Spirit, John xvi. 13. The "Spirit of truth shall guide you into all "truth." (5.) What is said of it, namely, not only that it is true and not false, but that it is truth, and no lie, doth plainly intimate his essential verity. And I cannot but wonder that any persons should against this open and plain evidence, ascribe the things here mentioned unto any thing else, and that exclusively unto the Holy Ghost. For so do some contend (Episcop. in loc. after Socir. on the same place) that by this unction the doctrine of the gospel only is intended. It is true that the doctrine of the gospel in the preaching of it, is the means or instrumental cause of this teaching by the Holy Ghost. And on that account what is spoken of the teaching of the Spirit of God, may be spoken in its place of the doctrine of the gospel, because he teacheth us thereby. But here it is spoken of objectively, as what we are to be taught, and not efficiently, as what it is that teacheth us. And to say as they do, it is the instruction which we have by the gospel that is

intended, is to assert the effect only, and to exclude the cause. For that signifies no more, but the effect of the unction here ascribed unto believers, as that which they had received from the Holy One. Dydimus, an ancient learned writer, interpreteth this unction to be the illuminating grace of the Spirit, and the Holy One to be the Spirit himself, lib. 2. de Spir. Sanct. But the other interpretation is more proper and consonant unto the use of the Scripture. The expression is taken from the institution of God under the Old Testament, whereby kings and priests are anointed with oil, to signify the gifts of the Spirit communicated unto them for the discharge of their office. And thence believers who are real partakers of the internal unction in the graces and gifts of the Holy Ghost, are said to be "made kings and priests unto God." It is therefore the work of the Holy Spirit that is here described. He alone with his gifts, graces, and privileges that ensue thereon, are so expressed, here or any where else in the whole Scripture.

2. Two things are to be observed in what is here ascribed unto this unction. First, What is the effect of his work in believers. Secondly, What is the nature of it, or how he produceth that effect.

For the first, there is a double expression of it; (1.) That they know all things. (2.) That "they need not "that any should teach them;" both which expressions admit of, yea require their limitations.

1. The "all things" intended come under a double restriction: the first taken from the nature of the things themselves; the other from the scope and circumstances of the place: or, the one from the general end, the other from the special design proposed.

1. The general end proposed, is our abiding in Christ. So "ye shall abide in him;" which the apostle expresseth, verse 24. by "continuing in the Son, and in the Father." Wherefore, the "all things" here mentioned, are all things necessary unto our ingrafting into and continuance in Christ. Such are all the fundamental, yea, important

truths of the gospel. Whatever is needful unto our communion with Christ, and our obedience to him, this all true believers are taught; however they may mistake in things of lesser moment, and be ignorant in the doctrine of some truths, or have but mean degrees of knowledge in any thing, yet shall they all know the mind and will of God as revealed in the Scripture, in all those things and truths which are necessary, that they may believe unto righteousness, and make confession unto salvation.

2. The especial end, under consideration, is preservation and deliverance from the antichrists, and seducers of those days, with the errors, lies, and false doctrines which they divulged, concerning Christ and the gospel. The only way and means whereby we may be so preserved from the poisons and infections of such pernicious opinions and ways, is the assured knowledge of the truths of the gospel, as they are revealed in the Scripture. All those truths which were any way needful to secure their faith, and preserve them from mortal seductions, they were taught and did know. And where any man knows the truths which are required unto his implantation into Christ, and his continuance with him in faith and obedience; as also, all those which may preserve him from the danger of seduction into pernicious errors; however he may fail and be mistaken in some things of less importance; yet is he secured as unto his present acceptable obedience, and future blessedness. And to speak of it by the way, this giveth us the rule of our especial communion and love. Where any are taught these things, where they have the knowledge, and make confession of that truth, or those articles of faith whereby they may abide in Christ, and are preserved from pernicious seductions, although they may differ from us and the truth in some things of less moment; we are obliged not only to forbearance of them, but communion with them: For who shall refuse them, whom Christ hath received? or doth Christ refuse any to whom he gives his Spirit, who have the unction from the Holy One? This, and no other, is the rule of our evangelical

love and communion among ourselves. Whatever we require more of any as a necessary condition of our Christian society in point of doctrine, is an unwarrantable imposition on their consciences or practice, or both.

2dly. It is said, that they so know these things, as that they "need not that any should teach them;" which also requireth a limitation or exposition. For,

1. It is only the things as before declared, that respect is had unto. Now besides these, there are many other things which believers stand in need to be taught continually; and whose knowledge belongs unto their edification. Many things are very useful unto us, that are not absolutely necessary. In natural things, and such as belong unto this present life: Men would be very unwilling to be without, or part with sundry things without which, yet life might be preserved, because they value them, as of use unto themselves, so enabling them to be useful unto others. And they who understand the nature, use and benefit of evangelical truths, will not be contented that their knowledge in them should be confined only unto those which are of absolute necessity unto the being of spiritual life. Yea, they cannot be well supposed to know those truths themselves, who pretend such a satisfaction in them as to look no farther. For all who are sincere in faith and knowledge, do aim at that "perfect man in Christ," which all the ordinances of God are designed to bring us unto, Eph. iv. 13. Wherefore, notwithstanding the knowledge of these things, there is still use and need of further ministerial teaching in the church.

2. It is spoken of the things themselves absolutely, and not with respect unto the degrees of the knowledge of them. They did so know them, as there was no need that any man should teach them unto them, as unto their initial knowledge and substance of the things themselves; and so it may be said of all believers. But yet there are degrees of knowledge with respect unto those very things, which they may and ought to be carried on unto, as the apostle speaketh, Heb. vi. 1. And therefore cloth the

holy apostle himself, who writes these things, farther instruct them in them. And herein consists the principal part of the ministry of the church, even to carry on believers unto perfection, in those things wherein for the substance of them, they have been already instructed.

3. That which is principally intended, is that they need not that any should teach them, so as that they should depend on the light and authority of their instruction. Others may be helpers of their joy, but none can be lords of their faith. You need no such teaching because of the unction which you have received.

2dly. For the general nature of the work here ascribed unto this unction, that is the Holy Spirit, it is teaching; the unction teacheth you. There are but two ways whereby the Spirit teacheth us; nor can any other be conceived. The one is by objective, the other by subjective revelations. For he teacheth us as a spirit of wisdom and revelation. The first way of his teaching is, by immediate inspiration, communicating new sacred truths from God immediately unto the minds of men. So he taught the prophets and apostles and all the penmen of the Scripture. By him the word of the Lord came unto them, and they spake as they were acted by him. 1 Pet. i. 11, 12. 2 Pet. i. 21. This is not the way of teaching here intended. For, the end of this teaching of the Holy Ghost is only to make men teachers of others, which is not here intended. Nor doth the apostle discourse unto any such purpose; as though God would grant new revelations unto men, to preserve them from errors and seductions, which he hath made sufficient provision for in the word, Isa. viii. 20. 2 Pet. i. 19. By this word were they to try all doctrines and pretended revelations, yea they which were so really before they received them, 1 John iv. 1. Besides what is here affirmed, is ascribed unto all sorts of believers, under the distribution which they are cast into by the apostle, namely, of old men, young men and babes, which had not all of them received the spirit of immediate revelation.

His other way of teaching is, that which we have insisted on; namely, his enabling us to discern, know, and understand the mind and will of God, as revealed in the Scripture, or as declared in any divine revelation; this alone is, or can be here intended. Wherefore this is the design of the apostle, in these words; All divine truths necessary to be known, and to be believed, that we may live unto God in faith and obedience, or come unto, and abide in Christ; as also, be preserved from seducers, are contained in the Scripture, or proposed unto us in divine revelations. These of ourselves we cannot understand, unto the ends mentioned; for if we could, there would be no need that we should be taught them by the Holy Spirit. But this is so, he teacheth us all these things, enabling us to discern, comprehend, and acknowledge them. And this is the whole of what we plead for.

For a close of our considerations on these words of the apostle, I shall only observe what assurance a man that is thus taught the truth, may have, that it is the truth which he is taught, and that he is not deceived in his apprehensions of it. For hereon depends the use of this instruction; especially in times of trial, indeed at all times and on all occasions. It is not enough that we know the truth, but we must be assured, that so we do. See Ephes. iv. 14. Col. ii. 2. And there was never a greater artifice in the world, than that whereby the Roman church hath imposed an impregnable obstinate credulity on all that adhere thereunto. For it doth first fix this in their minds, that itself cannot err, and therefore whatever is by her authority proposed unto them, is infallibly true. Hence it comes to pass that they will abide obstinate against all convictions, and the highest evidence of truth in all particular instances, whilst this principle is firmly fixed in their minds, that the church which proposeth these things unto them cannot err, nor be mistaken. Yea, whilst this persuasion abides with them, they may be, and indeed accordingly are, obliged to believe contradictions; things most irrational and absurd, inconsistent with Christian piety, and

the peace of human society. However, they say well in this, that it is necessary that a man should have good assurance of the truth which he doth profess, or of his own understanding of it, and conception about it. This the apostle calleth, the "riches of the full assurance of understanding," Col. ii. 2. whereof we shall speak afterwards.

Wherefore, whereas the assurance of mind, in other teachings depend much on the authority of them, by whom they are taught; on a supposition that believers are taught the mind of God in the Scripture by the Holy Spirit, or are by him enabled to discern and know it; the enquiry is, how, or by what means they have an assurance that they have a right understanding of the things which they are so taught, so as to abide in them, and the profession of them, against all opposition whatever; and so as to venture the eternal condition of their souls on that assurance they have of the truth; which every one must do, whether he will or no. And this in the text is referred unto the author of this teaching. For the anointing is truth, and is no lie; it is true and infallibly so. There is no fear of, no possibility for any man to be deceived in what he is taught by this unction. And an assurance hereof ariseth in our minds, partly from the manner of his teachings, and partly from the evidence of the things themselves that we are taught. The manner and way of his teaching us in and by the Scripture, evidenceth unto us, that what we are taught is true, and no lie. He giveth a secret witness unto what he teacheth in his teachings. "For it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth," 1 John v. 6. And with respect unto the evidence which is so given us of the truth, it is said, that the unction whereby we are taught is truth, and no lie; that is, it is impossible any one should be deceived who is so taught. This will more fully appear when we have declared the whole of his work herein; something only may now be spoken on occasion of this testimony.

There is a peculiar power accompanying the teaching

of God by his Spirit. "Behold, God exalteth by his power, who teacheth like him?" Job. xxxvi. 22. So our Saviour expoundeth that promise; "They shall be all taught of God; every man, saith he, therefore, that hath heard and learned of the Father cometh unto me," John vi. 45. There is such an efficacy accompanying of God's teaching, that whosoever is so taught, doth certainly believe the things that he is taught, as having the evidence of the truth of them in himself.

When the Holy Ghost gave new revelations of old unto the prophets and penmen of the Scripture by immediate inspiration, he did therein and therewith communicate unto them an infallible evidence that they were from God. And when he doth illuminate our minds in the knowledge of what is revealed, he doth therein himself bear witness unto, and assure us of the truth which we do understand. Hereby do we come to that which the apostle calleth the "full assurance of understanding in the acknowledgement "of the mystery of God." He not only enableth our minds to apprehend the truth, but "he shines into our "hearts," the seat of spiritual experience, to give us the "knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus "Christ." And the assurance which believers have thereby, is above that which any other evidence or demonstration whatever can give. And the meanest believer hath from this teaching, a greater rest, satisfaction, and assurance in the knowledge of the mind of God, than any can be attained by the most raised notions, or profound disquisitions; "for he that believeth hath the witness in himself;" 1 John v. 10. And why should others think it strange, that there should be that evidence of truth in the teachings of the Spirit, by the illumination of our minds, in the knowledge of the Scripture, as to give us an assurance of the highest nature, "seeing there is none that teacheth like him."

Want hereof is that which makes men to fluctuate in their conceptions of spiritual things, and so ready on every occasion to part with what they have received.

The church of Rome hath, as we observed, rather craftily than wisely, provided against any inconvenience herein. The doctrines which it teacheth are many of them false; and so the things contained in them can give no evidence unto themselves in the minds of men. For there is nothing but imagination in error, there is nothing of substance in it. And their way of teaching is not accompanied with any especial advantage; yea it is the most vain that ever was in the world. They would have men suppose that they may advance at once in the true belief of an hundred things whereof they have no evidence, merely resting on the infallibility of the church, by which they say, they are proposed. Wherefore they teach men that although they receive no evidencing light, in this way of their instruction, nor have any experience of the power or efficacy of truth in what they are taught, yet they may rest assuredly in the infallibility of the church. Hence the assurance they have of any thing they suppose truth, is not an act of the mind in the embracing of the truth, from any evidence that it gives of itself, but a presumption in general that the church is infallible, by which these things are proposed unto them. The design is to prevail with men, to suppose that they believe all things, when indeed they believe nothing: that they understand the mind and will of God, when indeed they understand nothing at all of them. For a man believes nothing but what is accompanied with an evidence whereon it ought to be believed. But this they pretend not unto, at least, not such that should give them that assurance of the truth of it, which is requisite; and therefore are all men by them referred for that, unto the infallibility of the church. Persons weak, ignorant, credulous, or superstitious, either for interest, or by the craft of seducers, may be prevailed on to make their resort unto this relief; those who will not rationally forego the conduct of their own souls, and leave themselves unto the guidance of others, knowing that it is they alone, who must give an account of themselves, to God; will not easily be induced thereunto.

Others, will resolve all into their own rational conceptions of things, without any respect unto a superior infallible teacher. And the minds of many influenced by this notion, that they have themselves alone to trust unto, are come unto the utmost uncertainty and infallibility in all things of religion; nor can it otherwise be. For the mind of man is in itself as indifferent and undetermined unto any thing, as true, or false, (unless it be in its first notions of the common principles of reason) beynd the evidence that is proposed unto it: so also is it various, unsteady, and apt to fluctuate from one thing to another. And there are but two ways whereby it may be naturally ascertained, and determined in its conceptions and assent. The first is by the use of the external senses, which will not deceive it; however it cannot but receive, believe, and comply with what it comprehends by its senses; as what it sees, hears, and feels. The other is by reason, whereby it deduceth certain conclusions, from propositions of necessary truth; that is, by demonstration. But by neither of these ways can the mind be brought unto a stability and assurance in or about things spiritual or supernatural. For they are neither the objects of natural sense, nor capable of a scientisical demonstration. Wherefore a man can have nothing but a probability or conjectural knowledge concerning them, unless he have some certain infallible teaching wherein he can acquiesce. And such is that of this unction, which is truth and no lie. In and by his teaching of us, namely, the mind of God as revealed in the Scripture, there is that evidence of truth communicated unto our minds and hearts, as giveth us an immovable assurance of them, or the full assurance of understanding. For God therein shines into our hearts, to give us the knowledge of his glory in the face of Jesus Christ.

Again, there is an evidence in the things themselves, unto "spiritual sense and judgement," Phil. i. 9. Heb. v. last. This is that which gives the mind the highest assurance of the truth of what it doth believe, that it is capable of in this world. For when it finds in itself the

power and efficacy of the truth wherein it is instructed, that it worketh, effecteth, and implanteth the things themselves upon it, giving and ascertaining unto it all the benefits and comforts which they promise or express, and is thereby united unto the soul, or hath a real, permanent, efficacious subsistence in it; then, I say, hath the mind the utmost assurance in the truth of it, which it doth or can desire in the things of this nature, but this belongs not unto our present design.

The testimonies pleaded are sufficient for the confirmation of our first general assertion, namely, that it is the Holy Spirit who teacheth us to understand aright the mind and will of God in the Scripture, without whose aid and assistance we can never do so usefully nor profitably unto our own souls. Sundry others that speak unto the same purpose will be afterwards on various occasions insisted on.

I might add unto these testimonies, the faith and profession of the church in all ages. They all believed and professed that the Scriptures could not be understood and interpreted without his assistance and inspiration by whom they are indited. But it is not necessary so to do. For those who profess a trust unto their own reason and understanding only, cannot be so ignorant as not to know that they have no countenance given unto their persuasion in antiquity, unless it were by the Pelagians. But whereas there is no profitable handling of sacred truths on any pretence, but with an eye unto the guidance of Christian practice; and when that is manifest, it gives a great confirmation in our minds unto the truth itself. I shall, before I proceed unto the consideration of the especial ways of the teaching of the Holy Spirit in this matter, and the especial duties required of us in compliance with them, that they may be effectual, divert a little unto some considerations of that nature, as derive from this general assertion.

It is the great promise of the New Testament, That all believers shall be *διδασκοντες οις*, "taught of God;" which

our Saviour himself pleads as the only ground of their believing, John vi. 45. And so the apostle tells the Thessalonians, that they were *θεοδιδακτοι* 1 Thess. iv. 9. "Taught of God." No man is *αυτοδιδακτός* taught of himself, his own teacher and guide in sacred things. Neither can any man have a worse master, if he trust thereunto alone. The diligent use of all outward means appointed of God unto this end, that through the knowledge of the Scripture we may be made wise unto salvation ; we always suppose. Amongst them the ministry of the church hath the first and chiefest place. Ephes. iv. 12, 13, 14, 15 For they are with me of no account, who think it not worth the utmost of their diligence to attain the knowledge of those wonderful things that are in the word. Yea I should greatly admire at their stupidity, who will not give so much credit unto the Scripture testifying of itself, and the suffrage of all good men with it, that there are wonderful things contained in it, so far as to enquire with their utmost diligence, whether it be so or no, but that I know the reasons and causes of it. But a Supreme Teacher there must be, on whose wisdom, power, and authority, we ought principally to depend, as unto this end, of being taught of God. And hereunto the use of our own reason, the utmost improvement of the rational abilities of our minds, is required. Those who would take away the use of our reason in spiritual things, would deal with us as we said before, as the Philistines did with Sampson ; first put out our eyes, and then make us grind in their mill. The Scripture we own as the only rule of our faith, as the only treasury of all sacred truths. The knowledge we aim at, is the full assurance of understanding in the mind and will of God revealed therein. The sole enquiry is, whether this supreme teacher be the Spirit of God instructing us in and by the Scripture, or whether it be the authority of this or that, any, or all of the churches in the world, which either are so, or pretend to be so. Which of these will it be our wisdom to chuse and adhere unto ? That the Holy Spirit hath taken this work upon himself,

we have already proved, and shall afterwards farther demonstrate. Some churches, especially that of Rome, assume this office unto themselves. But it is too well known to the most to be trusted herein. And a great prejudice there lieth in this cause against that church at first. The Holy Spirit leaves unto us, yea requires of us the diligent use of the Scripture, and exercise of our own reason in subserviency unto his teaching. But this church requires us to renounce them both, in compliance with herself. And can it stand in competition with him? He is infallible, the unction is truth, and it is no lie; the Spirit is truth. This also indeed that church pretends unto; but with such an open affront unto all evidence of truth, as the world never underwent from any of its people before. He is absolutely, infinitely, eternally free from any design but the glory of God, the present and eternal good of them that are instructed by him. It will be very difficult for those of Rome to pretend hereunto. Yea, it is apparent, that all the exercise of their instructing authority lieth in a subserviency unto their own interest. When I see that men by a pretence hereof, have gotten unto themselves wealth, power, principalities, dominions, with great revenues, and do use them all unto their own advantage, and mostly to the satisfaction of their lusts, pleasures, pride, ambition, and the like inordinate affections, I confess I cannot be free to deliver up blindfold the conduct of my soul unto them. He is full of divine love and care of the souls of them whom he doth instruct; is it so with them, or can any creature participate in his love and care? He is infinitely wise, and "knoweth all things, yea the deep things of God," and can make known what he pleaseth of them unto us: as the apostle discourses, i Cor. ii. They who preside in that church are ignorant themselves as all men are, and the less they know it, the more ignorant they are; yea, for the most part as unto sacred things they are comparatively so, with respect unto other ordinary men. As a late pope, when some of their divines waited for an infallible determination of a Theo-

logical controversy among them, confessed, that he had not studied those things, nor had the knowledge of them been his profession.

But yet notwithstanding, these and several other differences between these teachers; it is marvellous to consider how many betake themselves unto the latter of them, and how few unto the former. And the reason is, because of the different qualifications they require in them that are to be taught. For as unto them whom the Spirit of God undertaketh to instruct, he requireth that they be meek and humble, that they give themselves unto continual prayer, meditation, and study in the word day and night; above all that they endeavour a conformity in their whole souls and lives unto the truths that he instructs them in. These are hard conditions unto flesh and blood; few there are who like them, and therefore few they are who apply themselves unto the school of God. We may be admitted scholars by the other teacher on far cheaper and easier rates. Men may be made good catholics as to faith and understanding, without the least cost in self-denial, or much trouble unto the flesh in any other duty. There is no qualification required for the admission of a man into the catholic schools, and barely to be there, is to be wise and knowing enough. Wherefore although all advantages imaginable as unto the teachers lie on the one hand, yet the pretended easy way of learning, casts the multitude on the other. For it requireth more wisdom than we have of ourselves, to be at all that charge and pains in spiritual duty, and diligence in the use of all means for the right understanding of the mind of God, which is required in and of all them, who will advantageously partake of the teachings of the Holy Spirit; when it is supposed we may have all the ends which we aim at thereby, in an easy and naked assent unto the proposals of the church, without the least farther charge or trouble. But these are the measures of slothful and carnal minds, who prefer their ease, their lusts and pleasures before their souls. There is difficulty in all things that are excellent. Nei-

ther can we partake of the excellency of any thing unless we will undertake its difficulty. But although the ways whereby we may come unto a participation of the teaching of the Holy Ghost, seem at first rough and uneasy, yet unto all that engage in them, they will be found to be, "ways of pleasantness and paths of peace."

It may be said, that it is evident in common experience, that many men do attain a great knowledge and skill in the things revealed in the Scripture, without any of that internal teaching by the illumination of their minds, which is pleaded for; especially if it be to be obtained by the means now intimated, and afterwards more fully to be declared. For they themselves do renounce the necessity of any such teaching, and esteem all that is spoken of it a vain imagination; and not only so, but leave some of them in an open defiance of all those qualifications and duties which are required unto a participation of these teachings. Yet it is foolish to pretend they are not skilled in the knowledge of divinity, seeing it is plain that they excel most other men therein; and therefore do sufficiently despise all them who pretend unto any benefit by the supernatural illumination contended for.

I answer briefly in this place; It is true there are, and ever were, some, yea many who profess that they know God, but in works deny him, being abominable and disobedient. The knowledge which such men may attain, and which they make profession of, belongs not unto our enquiry; and we may easily discern both what it is in itself, and wherein it differs from that true knowledge of God, which it is our duty to have. For,

i. There is in the Scripture with respect unto the mind and will of God revealed therein, with the mysteries of truth and grace, mention of *γνῶσις* and *επιγνῶσις*; knowledge and acknowledgment. The former if it be alone, affects only the speculative part of the mind with notions of truth. And it is of very little use, but subject unto the highest abuse; 1 Cor. viii. 1. *η γνῶσις φυτον*. It is that which puffs up men into all their proud contentions about reli-

gion, which the world is filled withal. The other gives the mind an experience of the power and efficacy of the truth known or discovered ; so as to transform the soul and all its affections into it ; and thereby to give a “ full assurance of understanding” unto the mind itself, Phil. i. 9. Luke i. 4. Col. i. 6, 9, 10. ch. ii. 2. and iii. 10. Rom. x. 2. Ephes. i. 17. chap. iv. 13. 1 Tim. ii. 4. 2 Tim. ii. 25. chap. iii. 7. Tit. i. 1. 2 Pet. i. 2, 3, 8. chap. ii. 20. It is not worth disputing at all, what knowledge of the first kind, or what degree therein, men, any men, the worst of men may attain by their industry and skill in other common arts and sciences. For what if they should make such a proficiency therein, as to be filled with pride in themselves, and to confound others with their subtle disputation? will any real profit redound hence unto themselves or the world, or the church of God? It doth not therefore deserve the least contention about it. But that acknowledgement of the truth which affects the heart, and conforms the soul unto the will of God revealed, is not attainable in any degree without the saving illumination of the Spirit of God.

Men may have a knowledge of words, and the meaning of propositions in the Scripture, who have no knowledge of the things themselves designed in them. The things revealed in the Scripture are expressed in propositions whose words and terms are intelligible unto the common reason of mankind. Every rational man, especially if he be skilled in those common sciences and arts which all writings refer unto, may without any special aid of the Holy Ghost, know the meaning of the propositions laid down in, or drawn from the Scripture. Yea they can do so, who believe not one word of it to be true; and they do so, as well as the best of them who have no other help in the understanding of the Scripture, but their own reason, let them profess to believe what they will. And whatever men understand of the meaning of the words, expressions and propositions in the Scripture, if they believe not the things which they declare, they do not in any sense know

the mind and will of God in them. For to know a thing as the mind of God, and not to assent unto its truth, impieth a contradiction. I shall never grant that a man understands the Scripture aright, who understands the words of it only, and not the things which is the mind of God in them. For instance, the Jews understand the words of the Scripture of the Old Testament in its own original language. And they are able to perceive the grammatical sense and construction of the propositions contained in it. They are unacquainted with them and their writings, who will not acknowledge their skill, subtlety, and accuracy in these things. Yet will not any Christian say they understand the mind of God in the Old Testament: The apostle sheweth the contrary, and giveth the reason for it in the place before insisted on, 2 Cor. iii. Such a knowledge of the Scripture no wise man will value, let it be attained how it will.

3. This knowledge that may be thus attained doth only inform the mind in the way of an artificial science, but doth not really illuminate it. And to this end men have turned divinity into an art like other common human arts and sciences, and so they learnt it instead of "a spiritual wisdom and understanding of divine mysteries." It is true, that the knowledge of common learned arts and sciences is of great use unto the understanding of the Scripture, as unto what they have in common with other writings, and what they refer unto that is of human cognisance; but to bring in all the terms, notions and rules of those arts and sciences into divinity, and by the mixture of them with it, to compose a scheme of divine knowledge, is all one as if a man should design to make up his house of the scaffolds, which he only useth in the building of it. Such is that knowledge of the mind of God in the Scripture, which many aim at, and content themselves withal. And it may be attained as any other art or science may, without any supernatural aid of the Holy Spirit, and is sufficient to drive a trade with, which, as things are stated in the world, men may use and exercise unto

their great advantage. But as was said before, it was not that which we enquire after. That wisdom in the mystery of the gospel, that knowledge of the mind and will of God in the Scripture which affects the heart, and transforms the mind in the renovation of it unto the approbation of the good, acceptable and perfect will of God, as the apostle speaks, Rom. xii. 2. is alone valuable and desirable, as unto all spiritual and eternal ends.

4. It doth not give πνευμα πλούτον της πληροφορίας της συνθεσις εἰς πνευματικόν καὶ μηνιγγίς τῷ Θεῷ, “ all riches of full assurance of understanding to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God,” as Col. ii. 2. The apostle speaks: It gives unto men no other assurance of mind in the things that they know, but what they have from acknowledged principles and conclusions drawn from them, in any other science. But that knowledge which men have of the mysteries of the gospel by the teaching and illumination of the Holy Spirit, gives them “ the riches of assurance of understanding” of an higher nature, even the assurance of faith. That assurance I say which believers have in spiritual things, is of another nature and kind, than can be attained out of conclusions that are only rationally derived from the most evident principles. And therefore doth it produce effects of another nature both in doing and in suffering. For this is that which effectually and infallibly puts them on all those duties and that obedience in self-denial, and the mortification of sin, which the world either knoweth not or despiseth. “ For he that hath this hope in him purifieth himself even as God is pure,” 1 John. iii. 3. And this also enables them cheerfully and joyfully to suffer all that the world can inflict on them for the profession of those truths whereof they have that assurance. But nothing of this ensues on that common knowledge which men may have from themselves of sacred things. For,

5. It doth not enable men to trust in God, and adhere firmly unto him by love. The Psalmist speaking unto God, saith, “ they that know thy name will put their trust in thee,” Psal. ix. 10. To know the name of God, is to

know the revelations that he hath made of himself, his mind and his will in the Scripture. They that have this knowledge, he affirms, will put their trust in him. Therefore it is certain that those who put not their trust in God, have not the knowledge of him. There is a γνῶσις φανετομηρή, a knowledge falsely so called, which hath nothing of real spiritual knowledge but the name. And it is generally much given to disputing, or the maintaining of antitheses, or oppositions unto the truth, 1 Tim. vi. 20. But it is falsely called knowledge, in as much as those in whom it is, do neither trust in God, nor adhere unto him in love. And we shall not much enquire, by what means such a knowledge may be acquired.

It remaineth therefore notwithstanding this objection, that all real useful knowledge of the wonderful things that are in the Scripture, is an effect of God's "opening "our eyes" by the illuminating grace of his Holy Spirit.

And this will enable us to try the spirits, as we are commanded, of many amongst us. For some there are who at once have cast off a due respect unto their rule and guide, the Scripture and Holy Spirit of God. Some formerly have pretended unto such a guidance by the Spirit, as that they have neglected or rejected the written word. And some pretend such an adherence unto the word and such an ability in their own minds and reasons to understand it, as to despise the teaching of the Spirit. Others reject both the one and the other, betaking themselves unto another rule and guide, whereunto they ascribe all that belongs unto either or both of them. But a wandering light it hath proved unto them, that hath led them into a bog of many vain imaginations and corrupt opinions. And it is fallen out with them as might be expected. For although the Holy Spirit be promised to lead us into all truth, yet is he so in an especial manner unto those which concern the person, offices and grace of our Lord Jesus Christ immediately, whose Spirit he is. See John xvi. 13, 14, 15. 1 John ii. 27. Those therefore who renounce a dependence on him for instruction out of the word, are either

lest unto palpable ignorance about these things, or unto foolish corrupt imaginations concerning them. Hence some of them openly deny, some faintly grant, but evidently corrupt the truth, concerning the person of Christ; and as unto his offices and grace, they seem to have little regard. And what else can be expected from such who despise the teaching of that Spirit of Christ, who is promised to lead us into all truth concerning him. Nor will the loudest pretences of some unto the Spirit in this matter relieve them. For we enquire not after every spirit, that any who will, may make his boast of, but of that Spirit alone which instructs us in and by the written word. Until such men will return unto the only rule and guide of Christians, until they will own it their duty to seek for the knowledge of truth from the Scripture alone, and in their so doing depend not on any thing in themselves, but the saving instructions of the Spirit of God, it is in vain to contend with them. For they and we build on divers foundations, and their faith and ours are resolved into divers principles; ours into the Scripture, theirs into a light of their own. There are therefore no common acknowledged principles between us, whereon we may convince each other. And this is the cause that disputes with such persons are generally fruitless, especially as immixed with that intemperancy of reviling other men, wherein they exceed. For if that be a way either of learning or teaching of the truth, it is what the Scripture hath not instructed us in. When the veil shall be taken from their eyes, and they turned unto the Lord, they will learn more modesty and humility. In the mean time the issue between these men and us, is this and no other. We persuade men to take the Scripture as the only rule, and the holy promised Spirit of God sought by ardent prayers and supplications in the use of all means appointed by Christ for that end for their guide. They deal with men to turn into themselves, and to attend unto the light within them. Whilst we build on these most distant principles, the difference between us is irreconcileable, and will be eternal.

Could we come to an agreement here, other things would fall away of themselves. If we shall renounce the Scripture, and the instruction given out of it unto the church by the Spirit of God, betaking ourselves unto our own light, we are sure it will teach us nothing, but either what they profess or other things altogether as corrupt. And if they on the other hand, will forego their attendance to their pretended light, to hearken unto the voice of God in the Scripture only, and to beg sincerely the guidance of the Holy Spirit therein, they will learn from thence no other thing but what we profess. Until therefore they return unto the law and testimony, without which whatsoever is pretended, there is no light in any, we have no more to do, but labouring to preserve the flock of Christ in the profession of the truth once delivered unto the saints, to commit the difference between the word and spirit on the one hand, and the light within on the other, unto the decision of Jesus Christ at the last day.

2. It is from no other root that the contempt of the mysteries of the gospel, and the preferring of other doctrines before them, is sprung up into so much bitter fruit among us. It is by the Spirit of wisdom and revelation alone, that our minds are enlightened to know what is the hope of God's calling, and what are the riches of his glorious grace. What is his work herein upon our minds, and what upon the word itself, shall be afterwards declared. At present, from what hath been proved it is sufficiently evident, that without his especial gracious aid and assistance, no man can discern, like or approve of the mysteries of the gospel. And is it any wonder if persons who avowedly deny most of his blessed operations, should be either unacquainted with, or dislike those mysteries, so as to prefer that which is more suited unto their natural understanding and reason above them? For why should men esteem of those things which they do not understand; at least as they ought, nor will make use of the means whereby they may be enabled so to do? Wherefore if there be persons of such a pride and profaneness, as to undertake an en-

quiry into the Scriptures, to know the mind of God n them, and to teach it unto others, without prayers and supplications for the teaching, leading, guidance, and assistance of the Holy Spirit, or which is worse, contemn and despise all those things as enthusiastical, it may not be expected that they should ever understand, or approve of the mysteries that are contained therein. Is it not hence that both teachers and hearers make so slow a progress in the knowledge of the mysteries of the gospel, or grow so little in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesu Christ? How many are there amongst us who for the time, and outward means are become as babes, and have need of milk, and not of strong meat? Whence is it that so many teachers do so little endeavour “to go on to per-“fection,” but content themselves to dwell on the rudiments or first principles of our profession? Is there not great studying, and little profiting? great teaching, and little learning, much hearing, and little thriving? Do we abide in prayer, and abound in prayer, as we ought for that Spirit who “alone can lead us into all truth?” for that “unction which teacheth us all things” with assurance and experience. I fear here lieth our defect. However this I shall say, that there is no duty, which in this world we perform unto God, that is more acceptable unto him, than fervent prayers, for a right understanding of his mind and will in his word. For herein all the glory we give unto him, and the due performance of all our obedience do depend.

CHAP. IV.

The especial work of the Holy Spirit in the illumination of our minds unto the understanding of the Scripture, declared and vindicated. Objections proposed and answered. The nature of the work asserted, Psal. cxix. 18. Ephes. i. 18. 1 Pet. ii. 9. Col. i. 13. Luke xxiv. 25. John v. 20. opened and vindicated.

WE have, as I suppose, sufficiently confirmed our first general assertion concerning the necessity of an especial work of the Holy Ghost, in the illumination of our minds, to make us understand the mind of God as revealed in the Scripture.

That which we proceed unto is to shew the especial nature of his work herein. And I shall take occasion thereto from the consideration of an objection that is laid against the whole of what we affirm, which was touched on before.

For it is said that there is no need of this endeavour: All men do acknowledge that the aid of the Spirit of God is necessary unto the study and interpretation of the Scripture. And so it is unto all other undertakings that are good and lawful. And herein consists the blessing of God upon man's own diligence and endeavours. If this be that which is intended, namely, the blessing of God upon our endeavours in the use of means, it is granted. But if any thing else be designed, it is nothing, but to take off all industry in the use of means, to reject all helps of reason and learning, which is in the end to reduce into perfect enthusiasms.

Answer 1. Whether by the assignation of his own work unto the Spirit of God we take away or weaken the use of other means, for the right interpretation of the Scriptures, will be tried when we come unto the examination of those ways and means. At present I shall only say, that we establish them. For by assigning unto them their

proper place and use, we do manifest their work and necessity. But those by whom they or any of them are advanced into the place, and unto the exclusion of the operation of the Holy Spirit, do destroy them, or render them unacceptable unto God; and useless unto the souls of men. We shall therefore manifest that the assignations which we make in this matter unto the Holy Spirit, do render all our use of proper means for the right interpretation of the Scripture in a way of duty, indispensibly necessary; and the principal reason, so far as I can understand, why some deny the necessity of the work of the Holy Spirit herein, is, because they like not those means whose necessary use doth arise from an admission thereof.

But thus it hath fallen out in other things. Those who have declared any thing either of the doctrine, or of the power of the grace of the gospel, have been traduced as opposing the principles of morality and reason, whereas on their grounds alone, their true value can be discovered, and their proper use directed. So the apostle preaching faith in Christ with righteousness, and justification thereby, was accused to have made void the law, whereas without his doctrine the law would have been void, or of no use to the souls of men. So he pleads, Rom. iii. ver. 31. "Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid, yea we establish the law." So to this day, justification by the imputation of the righteousness of Christ, and the necessity of our own obedience, the efficacy of divine grace in conversion, and the liberty of our own wills, the stability of God's promises, and our diligent use of means, are supposed inconsistent. So it is here also. The necessity of the communication of spiritual light unto our minds to enable us to understand the Scriptures, and the exercise of our own reason in the use of external means, are looked on as irreconcileable. But as the apostle saith, "do we make void the law by faith? yea we establish it;" though he did it not in that place, nor unto those ends that the Jews would have had and used it. So we may say, do we by asserting the righteousness of

Christ, make void our own obedience; by the efficacy of grace, destroy the liberty of our wills; by the necessity of spiritual illumination, take away the use of reason? yea we establish them: We do it not, it may be, in such a way, or in such a manner as some would fancy, and which would render them all on our part really useless, but in a clear consistency with, and proper subserviency unto the work of God's Spirit and grace.

2. That in particular which lyeth before us, is to remove that pretence of some, that we need no other assistance of the Spirit of God for the right understanding of the Scripture, but only his blessing in general on our own endeavours. To this end two things are to be enquired into, (1.) What description is given of this work in the Scripture, and what are the effects of it in our minds in general. (2.) What is the nature of it in particular.

1. The work itself is variously expressed in the Scripture. And it is that which whether we will or no, we must be determined by in things of this kind. And the variety of expressions serves both unto the confirmation of its truth, and illustration of its nature.

A. It is declared by "opening of our eyes," Psal. cxix. 18. "The enlightening of the eyes of our understanding," Ephes. i. 18. This opening of our eyes consists in the communication of spiritual light unto our minds by the preaching of the word, as it is declared, Acts xxvi. 17, 18. And the expression though in part metaphorical, is eminently instructive in the nature of this work. For suppose the nearest and best disposed proposition of any object unto our bodily eyes, with an external light properly suited unto the discovery of it, yet if our eyes be blind, or are closed beyond our own power to open them, we cannot discern it aright. Wherefore on a supposition of the proposal unto our minds of the divine truths of supernatural revelation, and that in ways and by means suited unto the conveyance of it unto them, which is done in the Scripture, and by the ministry of the church with other outward means; yet without this work of the Spirit

of God, called the “opening of our eyes,” we cannot discern it in a due manner. And if this be not intended in this expression, it is no way instructive, but rather suited to lead us into a misunderstanding of what is declared, and of our own duty. So it is plainly expressed, Luke xxiv. 25. “Then opened he their understanding, that “they might understand the Scriptures.” None I suppose will deny but that it is the work of the Spirit of God thus to open our eyes, or to enlighten our understandings, for this were to deny the express testimony of the Scripture, and those frequently reiterated. But some say, he doth this by the word only, and the preaching of it. No other work of his, they affirm, is necessary hereunto, or to make us rightly to discern the mind of God in the Scripture, but that it be proposed unto us in a due manner, provided we purge our minds from prejudices, and corrupt affections. And this is the work of the Spirit in that he is the author of the Scripture, which he makes use of for our illumination. And it is granted, that the Scripture is the only external means of our illumination. But in these testimonies it is considered only as the object thereof. They express a work of the Spirit or grace of God upon our minds, with respect unto the Scripture as its object, “Open my eyes “that I may behold wondrous things out of thy law.” The law or the Scripture, with the wonderful things contained therein, are the things to be known, or to be discovered and understood. But the means enabling us thereunto, is an internal work upon our minds themselves, which is plainly expressed in distinction from the things to be known. This is the sum of what we plead, there is an efficacious work of the Spirit of God, opening our eyes, or enlightening our understandings or minds, to understand the things contained in the Scripture distinct from the objective propositions of them in the Scripture itself, which the testimonies urged do fully confirm.

2. It is expressed, as a translation out of darkness into light, he hath called us out of “darkness into marvellous

"light," 1 Pet. ii. 9. "Delivered us from the power of darkness," Col. i 13. whereby we who were "darkness, " became light in the Lord," Ephes. v. 8. That in these and the like testimonies, the removal of the inward darkness of our minds, by the communication of spiritual light unto them, and not merely the objective revelation of truth in the Scripture is intended, I have proved at large elsewhere, and therefore shall not again insist thereon.

3. It is directly called, the giving of us an understanding; "we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us understanding that we may know him that is true," 1 John v. 20. The object of our understanding, or that which we know, is he that is true. God himself even the Father is primarily intended in this expression; for in the following words there is mention of his Son Jesus Christ, who is in like manner said to be true, because of his unity in essence with the Father. And therefore it is added, "that this is the true God," ver. 21. But we are to know also what concerns our being in him, and to know him as he is eternal life. And those things contain the substance of all evangelical revelations, which one way or other depends upon them, and are resolved into them, John xvii. 3. To know the Father the only true God, and the Son as the true God also in the unity of the same essence, to know that eternal life which was with the Father as unto the eternal counsel and preparation of it, 1 John i. 2. and is in the Son for its actual communication unto us, and to know our being in him by a participation thereof, the things we mentioned, is to know the mind of God as revealed in the Scripture; especially these things are intended which are foolishness unto corrupted reason, and as such are rejected by it, 1 Cor. i. 23, 24. chap. ii. 14.

And two things we are to enquire into with reference unto this knowledge;

What we are to have, to enable us unto it, and that is an understanding.

How we come by it, It is given us by the Son of God.

That which we have ~~διανοία~~; this word in all other places of the New Testament, doth constantly denote the essential faculty of our souls, which we call understanding, Matth. xxii. 37. Mark xii. 30. Luke x. 27. Ephes. i. 18. chap. ii. 3, 4, 18. Col. i. 21. Heb. viii. 10. 1 Pet. i. 13. 2 Pet iii. 1. And it seems in the Scripture to be distinguished from the mind, by respect unto actual exercise only. The mind in its exercise in our understanding; but it cannot be the natural and essential faculty of our souls, that is here intended; for although our natures are corrupted by sin, and not repaired but by Jesus Christ; yet doth not that corruption nor reparation denote the destroying or new creation of this being, or the nature of those faculties, which continue the same in both estates: wherefore the understanding here mentioned, is no more but a power and ability of mind with respect unto what is proposed unto us, to receive and apprehend it in a due manner; we are not able of ourselves to know him that is true, and the eternal life that is in him, but he hath enabled us thereunto; for this understanding is given us unto that end, that we may so know him. Wherefore whatever is proposed unto us in the gospel, or in any divine revelation, concerning these things, we cannot know them, at least as we ought, unless we have the understanding here mentioned given unto us, for so alone do we come by it.

2. It is given us, that a real and effectual communication unto us of the thing said to be given, is intended in this word, of giving from God, is evident from every place in the Scripture where it is used. Some contend that God is said to give things unto us, when he doth what lies in him that we may enjoy them, though we are never made partakers of them. But the assignation of this way and manner of God's doing what lieth in him, where the effect designed doth not ensue, not strictly restrained unto outward means, is scandalous, and fit to be exploded out of Christian theology. God says, "What could have been done more to my vineyard that I have not done?" Isa. v. 4. But the expression hath plainly a double limi-

tation, (1.) Unto the use of outward means only, concerning which God speaks in that place, and from which he elsewhere plainly distinguisheth his giving them a new heart, and a new spirit, that they shall all know him, and be all taught of him. (2.) Unto the use of those outward means that were then established, as the only way for the season; for even in respect unto them he did more for his vineyard when he granted the gospel unto it. But is it possible that any man should think or believe that God cannot realy collate grace and mercy on the souls of men when he pleaseth? Is it not as easy with him, on our restoration by Christ, to implant habits of grace on our souls, as it was at first to create us in original rectitude and righteousness? Wherefore although we may enquire what God doth, and hath done in this matter according as he hath revealed it in his word, yet to say that he doth in any thing, what lieth in him, though the things which he affirms himself to do, be not effected, is defective both in truth and piety. When he saith he hath done such a thing, or will do so; for us to say, no he hath not done so, or he will not do so, but he hath done, or he will do what lies in him that it may be so, though it never be so, nor have so been, is to make him altogether like ourselves. But on this ground some pretend that the Son of God is said to have given men understanding, because he hath done what is requisite on his part in the declaration of the gospel, that we may have it, whether ever we have it or no. But (1.) what he is said to have done, he had at least a design to do, and if he had so, why doth it not take effect? It is, they say, because of the unwillingness of men to turn unto him, and other vicious habits of their minds, which hinders them from receiving instruction. But if it be so, then (1.) It is supposed that men also in their teachings can give us an understanding, as well as the Son of God; for they may teach men the knowledge of the gospel, if they are willing to learn, and have no darling lusts or vicious habits of mind to hinder them from learning. (2.) Seeing he hath taken this work on himself, and de-

signs its accomplishments, cannot the Son of God by his grace remove those vicious habits of the minds of men, that they may have an understanding of these things? If he cannot, why doth he take that on him which he cannot effect? If he will not, why doth he promise to do that which can never be done, without doing of what he will not do? and why is he said to do, (as he is according to this interpretation of the words) which he hath not done, which he will not or cannot do. (2.) The giving of an understanding is in this place plainly distinguished from the proposition of the things to be understood; that consists in the doctrine of the gospel, this in an ability to comprehend and know it.

Again, the words here used, of giving understanding, may indeed express the actings or operations of men towards others, when an external proposal of things to be understood, with the due use of means, is intended. But yet if under their teaching men do not learn or comprehend the things wherein they are instructed by them, they cannot properly be said to have given them an understanding of it with respect unto their moral operation unto that end, but only to have endeavoured so to do. But when this phrase of speech is used to express a divine operation, which questionless may be really physical, and so absolutely efficacious to interpret it concerning an endeavour that may, or may not succeed, is not suitable unto those thoughts that become us concerning divine operation. Now was there any reason why the apostle should emphatically assign this work, unto the Son of God, and that as he is the true God and eternal life; if no more be intended but a work of the same nature and kind, with what a man might do. And if this be the sense of the words; it is from ourselves and not from the Son of God, that there is any truth in them, as unto the event. For he might do, it seems, what lies in him to give an understanding; and yet no one man in the world ever had an understanding of the nature designed; for if it may be so with any unto whom he is said to give an understanding,

as it is professedly with the most ; it may be so with all : not further to debate these things at present, whereas so excellent a grace and mercy towards the souls of men, is here expressly attributed unto the Son of God, as the author of it ; namely, that he gives us an understanding that we may know him, which is true ; I cannot think, that they interpret the Scripture unto his glory, whose exposition of this place consists in nothing but endeavours to prove that indeed he doth not so do.

4. It is expressed by teaching, leading, and guiding into the truth, John vi. 45. chap. xvi. 13. 1 John ii. 20, 27. the places have been opened before ; and two things are supposed in this expression of teaching. 1. A mind capable of instruction, leading and conduct : the nature must be rational and comprehensive of the means of instruction, which can be so taught. Wherefore we do not only grant herein the use of the rational faculties of the soul, but require their exercise and utmost improvement : If God teacheth, we are to learn, and we cannot learn but in the exercise of our minds. And it is in vain pretended, that God's communication of a supernatural ability unto our minds, and our exercise of them in a way of duty, are inconsistent ; whereas indeed they are inseparable in all that we are taught of God. For at the same time that he infuseth a gracious ability into our minds, he proposeth the truth unto us, whereon that ability is to be exercised. And if those things are inconsistent, the whole real efficacy of God in the souls of men, must be denied ; which is to despoil him of his sovereignty ; but we speak now of natural abilities to receive instruction, to be taught, with the exercise of it in learning, for these are supposed in the expression of the communication of a spiritual ability by teaching. (2.) A teaching suited unto that ability is premised or asserted, three ways of this teaching are pleaded : (1.) That it consists in a *θεοπνευστικη* an immediate infallible, inspiration and *aflatus*, of the same nature with that of the prophets and apostles of old. But (1.) This takes away the distinction between the extraordinary and ordi-

nary gifts of the Spirit so fully asserted in the Scripture, as we shall elsewhere declare. And if it were so, God did not place in the church some prophets, seeing all were so, and were always to be so. (2.) It brings in a neglect of the Scripture, and a levelling it into the same state and condition with the conceptions of every one that will pretend unto this inspiration. (3.) The pretence visibly confutes itself, in the manifold mutual contradictions of them that pretend unto it. And would (4.) Thereon be a principle first of confusion, then of infidelity, and so lead unto atheism. (5.) The prophets themselves had not the knowledge and understanding of the mind and will of God which we enquire after by their immediate inspiration, which were unto them as the written word unto us; but had it by the same means as we have, 1 Pet. i. 10, 11. Hence they so frequently and fervently prayed for understanding, as we have seen in the instance of David.

Wherefore (2.) Some say this teaching consists only in the outward preaching of the word, in the ministry of the church, and other external means of its application unto our minds. But there is not one of the testimonies insisted on, wherein this promised teaching of God, is not distinguished from the proposition of the word in the outward dispensation of it, as hath been proved. Besides, every one that enjoys this teaching, that is, who is taught of God, doth really believe and come to Christ thereby. John vi. 45. "It is written in the prophets, and they shall be all taught of God, every man therefore that hath heard and learned of the Father cometh unto me," saith our blessed Saviour. But it is not thus with all nor ever was, towards whom the most powerful and cogent means of outward instruction have been or are used.

Wherefore (3.) This teaching is an internal work of the Spirit, giving light, wisdom, understanding unto our minds, so is spoken of, and promised in an especial manner distinct from the outward work of the dispensation of the word, and all the efficacy of it singly considered. One testimony will serve to this purpose which hath been plead-

ed and vindicated already, it is by an unction that we are thus taught, 1 John ii. 20, 21. But the unction consists in a real communication of supernatural gifts and graces; whereof supernatural light is that which is peculiarly necessary unto this end. The communication of them all, in all fulness unto Jesus Christ the head of the church was his unction, Heb. i. 9. Isa. lxi. 1. Wherefore in the real participation of them in our measure doth our unction whereby we are taught consist.

It is granted that this teaching is such as regards our own industry in the use of means appointed unto this end, that we may know the mind of God in the Scripture. But yet it is such as includes an inward effectual operation of the Holy Spirit concomitant with the outward means of teaching and learning. When the eunuch read the prophecy of Isaiah, he affirmed he could not understand it unless some one did guide him. Hereon Philip opened the Scripture unto him; but it was the Holy Ghost that opened his heart, that he might understand it; for so he did the heart of Lydia, without which she would not have understood the preaching of Paul, Acts xvi. 14. Wherefore in our learning, under the conduct or teaching of the Spirit, the utmost diligence in the exercise of our own minds is required of us. And where men are defective herein, they are said to be *stolid & unoxious*, Heb. v. 11. dull in hearing, or slow in the improvement of the instruction given them. And it is a senseless thing to imagine that men should be diverted from the exercise of the faculties of their minds, merely because they are enabled to use them unto good purpose, or successfully, which is the effect of this internal teaching.

5. It is expressed by shining into our hearts. "God who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined into our hearts: to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ," 2 Cor. iv. 6. Jesus Christ is the "image of the invisible God, the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person." And that because of the illustrious re-

presentation of all divine excellencies, that are made both in his person and his mediation. The person of the Father is the eternal fountain of infinitely divine glorious perfections; and they are all communicated unto the Son by eternal generation. In his person absolutely as the Son of God, they are all of them essentially; in his person as God-man, as vested with his offices, they are substantially in opposition unto all types and shadows; and in the glass of the gospel they are accidentally by revelation; really, but not substantially, for Christ himself is the body, the substance of all. As the image of God, so is he represented unto us in the glass of the gospel, and therein are we called “to behold the glory of God” in him, chap. iii. 18. The meaning is, that the truth and doctrine concerning Jesus Christ his person and mediation, is so delivered and taught in the gospel, as that the glory of God is eminently represented thereby, or therein is revealed what we are to know of God, his mind and his will as he is declared by and in Jesus Christ. But why is it then that all do not thus “behold the glory of God in the “face of Jesus Christ” unto whom the gospel is preached? or whence is it that all unto whom the gospel is preached or declared do not apprehend and understand the truth and reality, and glory of the things revealed or proposed? that is, why they do not understand the mind and will of God as revealed in the gospel? The apostle assigneth two reasons hereof, (1.) From what hindereth it in many; (2.) From what is necessary unto any that so they may do.

1. The first is the efficacy of the temptations and suggestions of Satan, whereby their minds are filled with prejudices against the gospel and the doctrine of it, being blinded hereby, they can see nothing of beauty and glory in it, and so certainly do not apprehend it aright. Verse 4. “The god of this world hath blinded the minds of “them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious “gospel of Christ who is the image of God should shine “into them.” This is acknowledged by all to be an obstacle against the right understanding of the gospel. Un-

less the mind be freed from such prejudices as are the effects of such blinding efficacy of the suggestions of Satan, men cannot attain unto the true knowledge of the mind of God therein. How these prejudices are removed we shall shew afterwards. But if the mind be free, or freed from them, then it is supposed by some, that there is need of no more but the due exercise of its faculties with diligence for that end, nor is any thing else required thereunto. It is true, in the ordinary dispensation of divine grace this is required of us. But the apostle adds,

2. That there must moreover be a divine light shining into our hearts, to enable us hereunto. At least he doth so that this was granted unto them who then did believe. And if we have it not, as well as they, I fear we do not believe in the same manner as they did. Wherefore although there be in the gospel, and the doctrine of it, an illustrious representation of the glory of God in Christ; yet are we not able of ourselves to discern it, until the Holy Spirit by an act of his almighty power do irradiate our minds, and implant a light upon them suited thereunto. He that doth not "behold the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ in the gospel," doth not understand the mind and will of God as revealed therein, in a due manner. I suppose this will be granted, seeing both these things are but one and the same diversly expressed. But this of ourselves we cannot do. For there is an internal work of God upon our minds necessary thereunto. This also is expressed in the words. It is his "shining into our hearts to give the light of this knowledge unto us;" there is a light in the gospel; "the light of the glorious gospel of Christ," ver. 4. But there must be a light also in our hearts, or we cannot discern it. And this is no natural light, or a light that is common unto all; but it is a light that in a way of grace is given unto them that do believe. And it is wrought in us by the same kind of efficiency, as God created light at the beginning of the world; namely, by a productive act of power. It is evident therefore that the light in our hearts, which

God communicates unto us, that we may have the true knowledge of his mind and will in the gospel, is distinct from that light of truth which is in the gospel itself. The one is subjective, the other is objective only; the one is wrought in us, the other is proposed unto us; the one is an act of divine power in us, the other an act of divine grace and mercy towards us.

Other ways there are whereby this operation of the Holy Spirit in the illumination of our minds is expressed. The instances given, and testimonies considered, are sufficient unto our purpose. That which we are in the proof of is, that there is more required unto an useful apprehension and understanding of the mind of God in the Scripture, than the mere objective proposal of it unto us, and our diligent use of outward means to come to the knowledge of it; which yet as we shall shew is from the Holy Spirit also. And as the denial hereof doth by just consequence make void the principal means whereby we may come unto such an understanding, namely, frequent and fervent prayers for the aid and assistance of the Holy Spirit; so no tolerable account can be given of the mind of God, and the meaning of the Scripture in the places insisted on. And certainly if we cannot understand the way and manner of the operation of the Holy Spirit herein, it were much better to captivate our understanding unto the obedience of truth, than to wrest and pervert the Scripture, or debase the spiritual sense of it unto a compliance with our conceptions and apprehensions. But as we have herein the suffrage of them that do believe, in their own experience, who both value and acknowledge this grace and privilege unto the glory of God; so we have multiplied instances of such as being destitute of that skill which should enable them to make use of sundry external means which are in their proper place of great advantage, who yet by virtue of this divine teaching are wise in the things of God, beyond what some others with all their skill, can attain unto.

Moreover, the effect of this work of the Holy Spirit on

the minds of men, doth evidence of what nature it is. And this also is variously expressed. As,

1. It is called light. "Ye were darkness, but are now "light in the Lord," Ephes. v. 8. The introduction of light into the mind is the proper effect of illumination. Men in their natural estate are said to be darkness, the abstract for the concrete, to express how deeply the mind is affected with it; for as our Saviour saith, "If the light "that is in any be darkness," (as it is in them who are darkness) "how great is that darkness!" Math. vi. 23. And because men are subject to mistake herein, and to suppose themselves with the Pharisees to see, when they are blind, he gives that caution, "Take heed therefore "that the light which is in thee be not darkness," Luke xi. 35. For men are very apt to please themselves with the working and improvement of their natural light, which yet in the issue with respect unto spiritual things, will prove but darkness. And while they are under the power of this darkness, that is, while their minds are deeply affected with their natural ignorance, they "cannot perceive spiritual things," 1 Cor. ii. 14. nor not when they are most evidently proposed unto them. For although the "light shineth in darkness," or cast out its beams in the evidence and glory of spiritual truth, yet "the darkness comprehendeth it not," John i. 5. But by this work of the Holy Spirit we are made "light in the Lord." Light in the mind is a spiritual ability to discern and know spiritual things, as is declared, 2 Cor. iv. 6. This is bestowed upon us, and communicated unto us by the Holy Spirit. There is a real difference between light and darkness. And it is our minds that are affected with them, Luke xi. 35. The removal of the one, and the introduction of the other, are things not absolutely in our own power. He who is darkness, cannot make himself light in the Lord. Whatever he may do in way of disposition or preparation, in way of duty and diligence, in the utmost improvement of the natural faculties of his mind, (which no man will ever rise unto who is under the power of this darkness, because of the in-

superable prejudices, and corrupt affections that it fills the mind withal) yet the introduction of this light is an act of him who openeth the eyes of our understandings, and shines into our hearts. Without this light no man can understand the Scripture as he ought; and I shall not contend about what they see or behold who are in darkness.

The expulsion of spiritual darkness out of our minds, and the introduction of spiritual light into them, a work so great, that they who were darkness, whose light was darkness, are made light in the Lord thereby, is an effect of the immediate power of the Spirit of God. To ascribe other low and metaphorical senses unto the words, is to corrupt the Scripture, and to deny the testimony of God. For this light he produceth in us by the same power, and the same manner of operation, whereby he brought light out of darkness at the creation of all things. But by this way and means it is, that we attain the knowledge of God in the face of Jesus Christ, or the revelation of his mind and will in the gospel.

2. It is called understanding. So the Psalmist prays, " Give me understanding and I shall keep thy law," Psal. cxix. 34. So the apostle speaks to Timothy; " Consider what I say, and the Lord give thee understanding in all things," 2 Tim. ii. 7. Besides his own consideration of what was proposed unto him, which includes the due and diligent use of all outward means: It was moreover necessary that God should give him understanding by an inward effectual work of his Spirit, that he might comprehend the things wherein he was instructed. And the desire hereof, as of that without which there can be no saving knowledge of the word, nor advantage by it, the Psalmist expresseth emphatically with great fervency of spirit, Psalm cxix. 144. " The righteousness of thy testimonies is everlasting. O give me understanding and I shall live." Without this he knew that he could have no benefit by the everlasting righteousness of the testimonies of God. All understanding, indeed, however it be

abused by the most, is the work and effect of the Holy Ghost. For the “inspiration of the Almighty giveth understanding,” Job xxxii. 8. So is this spiritual understanding in an especial manner. And in this understanding both the ability of our minds, and the due exercise of it is included. And this one consideration that the saints of God have, with so much earnestness, prayed that God would give them understanding in his mind and will, as revealed in the word; with his reiterated promises that he would so do, is of more weight with me, than all the disputes of men to the contrary. And there is no further argument necessary to prove that men do not understand the mind of God in the Scripture in a due manner, than their supposal and confidence that so they can do without the communication of a spiritual understanding unto them by the Holy Spirit of God; which is so contrary unto the plain express testimonies thereof.

3. It is called wisdom. For by this work on the minds of men they are rendered wise unto salvation. So the apostle prays for the Colossians, “That God would fill them with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding,” chap. i. 9. These things may be the same, and the latter exegetical of the former. If there be a difference, wisdom respects things in general, in their whole system and complex; understanding respects particulars as they are to be reduced unto practice. Wherefore the spiritual understanding which the apostle prays for, respects the mind of God in especial or particular places of the Scripture; and wisdom is a skill and ability in the comprehension of the whole system of his counsel, as revealed therein. He who is thus made wise, and he alone can understand the things of God as he ought, Dan. xii. 10. Hos. xiv. 9. Psalm cvii. 45. Although men may bear themselves high on their learning, their natural abilities, their fruitful inventions, tenacious memories, various fancies, plausibility of expression, with long study and endeavours, things good and praise worthy in their kind and order; yet unless they are thus made wise by the

Spirit of God, they will scarce attain a due acquaintance with his mind and will. For this effect of that work is also expressly called knowledge, Col. i. 9. 2 Cor. iv. 6. Eph. i. 17. Col. iii. 10. Wherefore without it we cannot have that which is properly so called.

This is the second thing designed in this discourse. In the first it was proved in general, that there is an effectual operation of the Spirit of God on the minds of men, enabling them to perceive and understand the supernatural revelations of the Scripture when proposed unto them. And in the second is declared, what is the nature of that work, and what are the effects of it on our minds. Both of them have I treated merely from Scripture testimony. For in vain shall we seek to any other way or means for what we ought to apprehend and believe herein. Neither is the force of these testimonies to be eluded by any distinctions or evasions whatever. Nor whilst the authority of the Scripture is allowed, can any men more effectually evidence the weakness and depravation of their reason, than by contending that in the exercise of it; they can understand the mind and will of God, as revealed therein, without the especial aid and illumination of the Spirit of God. Nor can any man on that supposition with any wisdom or consistency in his own principles, make use in a way of duty of the principal means whereby we may so understand them, as will afterwards more fully appear.

CHAP. V.

Causes of the ignorance of the mind of God revealed in the Scripture; and of errors about it; what they are; and how they are removed.

THE supposition we proceed upon in this discourse is, that God hath revealed his mind and will unto us, as unto all things concerning his worship, with our faith

and obedience therein, in the holy Scripture. Thereon do we enquire by what means we attain the saving knowledge of the mind of God so revealed. And my principal design is to shew, what aid and assistance we receive from the Holy Ghost unto that end. To further us in the knowledge hereof, I shall enquire into the causes and reasons of that ignorance, and those misapprehensions of the mind of God as revealed, which are amongst men, and how our minds are delivered from them.

It may be this part of our discourse might have had a more proper place assigned unto it, after we have given the truth pleaded a more full confirmation. But whereas an objection may arise from the consideration of what we shall now insist on, against the truth contended for; I thought it not amiss so to obviate it, as therewithall farther to illustrate the doctrine itself, which we labour in.

All men see, and most men complain of that ignorance of the mind of God, and those abominable errors attended with false worship which abound in the world. How few are there who understand and believe the truth aright? What divisions, what scandals, what animosities, what violence, mutual rage and persecutions, do ensue hereon, among them that are called Christians, is likewise known. Hence some take occasion to countenance themselves in an open declension unto atheism, some unto a great indifferency in all religion, some to advance themselves and destroy others, by the advantage of their opinions, according as they are prevalent in some times and places. A brief enquiry into the causes of that darkness and ignorance which is in the world amongst men outwardly owning the doctrine of the gospel, and especially of the errors and heresies which do abound above what they have done in most ages, may be of use to preserve us from those evils. A subject this is, that would require much time and diligence unto the handling of it in a due manner. I intend only at present to point at the heads of some few things, the observation whereof may be of use unto the end designed.

Those of the Roman church tell us, that the cause hereof is, the obscurity, difficulty, and perplexity of the Scripture. If men will trust thereunto as their only guide, they are sure to miscarry. Wherefore the only relief in this matter is, that we give up our souls unto the conduct of their church, which neither can err, nor deceive. So indeed said Adam of old, when he was charged with his sin and infidelity ; “The woman that thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat.” But whereas it is an evil, yea the greatest of evils, whose causes we enquire after, it seems in general more rational that we should seek for them in ourselves, than in any thing that God hath done. For he alone is good and we are evil.

It is granted that God hath given us his word, or the holy Scriptures as a declaration of his mind and will ; and therefore he hath given it unto us for this very end and purpose, that we may know them and do them. But whereas many men do fail herein, and do not understand aright what is revealed, but fall into pernicious errors and mistakes unto his dishonour and their own ruin, is it meet to say unto God, that this comes to pass from hence, because the revelation he hath made of these things is dark, obscure and intricate ? or the Scripture which thou hast given us doth deceive us ? would a due reverence or deferency unto the wisdom, goodness and love of God unto mankind be preserved therein ; *Audax omnia perpeti gens humana ruit per vetitum nefas.* What will not the prejudices and corrupt interests of men carry them out into ? God will for ever preserve those that are his, in an abhorrency of that religion, be it what it will, that by any means leads unto an undervaluation of that revelation of himself, which in infinite wisdom and goodness he hath made unto us.

But is it because there is no reason to be given of this evil from the minds of men themselves, that it is thus ascribed unto God ? May not as well all the wickednesses that the world is filled withal be ascribed unto him and what he hath done ? Doth not each one see a suffi-

cient cause hereof even in himself, if he were not delivered from it by the power of the Spirit and grace of God? Do not other men who fail in the right knowledge of God, especially in any important truths, sufficiently evidence in other things, that the root of this matter is in themselves? Alas! how dark are the minds of poor mortals, how full of pride and folly? I shall say with some confidence, he who understands not that there is reason enough to charge all the errors, ignorance and confusions in religion, that are, or ever were in the world, without the least censure of obscurity, insufficiency or intricacy in the Scripture, on the minds of men, and those depraved affections whose prevalency they are obnoxious unto, are themselves profoundly ignorant of the state of all things above and here below.

We must therefore enquire after the causes and reasons of these things among ourselves, for there only they will be found.

And these causes are of two sorts, (1.) That which is general, and the spring of all others; (2.) Those which are particular that arise and branch themselves from thence.

The first and general cause of all ignorance, error and misunderstanding of the mind and will of God, as revealed in the Scripture, among all sorts of men, whatever their particular circumstances are, is the natural vanity and darkness with which the minds of all men are depraved. The nature of this depravation of our minds by the fall, and the effects of it, I have fully elsewhere declared. Wherefore I now take it for granted that the minds of all men are naturally prepossessed with this darkness and vanity, from whence they are not, from whence they cannot be delivered but by the saving illumination of the Spirit and grace of God. But because I have so largely treated of it both in the discourses of the dispensation of the Spirit. Book iii. chap. iii. As also in those concerning the apostacy of these latter times, I shall not again insist upon it.

Two things I shall only observe unto our present purpose, namely (1.) That hereby the mind is kept off from

discerning the glory and beauty of spiritual heavenly truth, and from being sensible of its power and efficacy, John i. 5. (2.) That it is by the same means inclined unto all things that are vain, curious, superstitious, carnal, suited unto the interest of pride, lust and all manner of corrupt affections. Hence whatever other occasions of error and superstition may be given or taken, the ground of their reception, and of all adherence unto them, is the uncured vanity and darkness of the minds of men by nature. This is the mire wherein this rush doth grow.

And the consideration hereof will rectify our thoughts concerning those whom we see daily to wander from the truth, or to live in those misapprehensions of the mind of God which they have imbibed, notwithstanding the clear revelation of it unto the contrary. Some think it strange that it should be so, and marvel at them : Some are angry with them, and some would persecute and destroy them. We may make a better use of this consideration ; for we may learn from it the sad corruption and depravation of our minds in our estate of apostacy from God. Here lies the seed and spring of all the sin, evil and disorder which we behold and suffer under in religious concerns in this world. And if we consider it aright, it will serve,

1. To impress a due sense of our own condition upon our minds, that we may be humbled. And in humility alone there is safety. " His soul which is lifted up is not upright in him," Hab. ii. 2, 4 for he draws back from God, and God hath no pleasure in him, as the apostle expounds those words, Heb. x. 38. It was in the principles of our nature to adhere sacredly unto the first truth, to discern and abhor every false way : We were created with that light of truth in our minds, as was every way able to guide us in all that we had to believe or do, with respect unto God, or our own blessedness for ever. But in the room thereof, through our wretched apostacy from God, our mind is become the seat and habitation of all vanity, disorder and confusion. And no way doth this more discover itself than in the readiness and proneness of multi-

tudes to embrace whatever is crooked, perverse and false in religion, notwithstanding the clear revelation that God hath made of the whole truth concerning it in the Scripture. A due reflection hereon may teach us humility and self-abasement. For we are by nature children of wrath even as others; neither have we any good thing that we have not received. It is better therefore to be conversant with such thoughts on this occasion, than to be filled with contempt of, or wrath against those whom we see yet suffering under those woeful effects of the general apostacy from God, wherein we were equally involved with them.

Yea,

2. It will teach us pity and compassion towards those whose minds do run out into the spiritual excesses mentioned. The merciful High Priest of the whole church "hath compassion on the ignorant, and them that wander out of the way," Heb. v. 2. and it is conformity unto him in all things, which ought to be our principal design, if we desire to be like unto him in glory. Want hereof is the ruin of religion, and the true cause of all the troubles that its profession is encumbered withal at this day.

It is true, for the most part there is an interposition of corrupt affections seducing the minds of men from the truth. With these are they tossed up and down, and so driven with the winds of temptations that befall them. But is it humanity to stand on the shore, and seeing men in a storm at sea wherein they are ready every moment to be cast away, and perish, to storm at them ourselves, or to shoot them to death, or to cast fire into their vessel, because they are in danger of being drowned? Yet no otherwise do we deal with them whom we persecute, because they miss the knowledge of the truth, and it may be raise a worse storm in ourselves as to our own morals, than they suffer under in their intellectuals. Concerning such persons the advice of the apostle is, "of some have compassion making a difference, and others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire," Jude xxii. 23. Some are so given up in their apostacy, as that they sin unto death,

with such we are not to concern ourselves, 1 John v. 16. But it is very rare that we can safely make that judgment concerning any in this world. Sometimes no doubt we may, or this rule concerning them had never been given. As unto all others, the worst of them, those that are in the fire, the frame of our minds acting towards them, are here presented unto us; compassion of their present state, and fear of their future ruin, we ought to be possessed with, and acted by. But how few are they who are so framed and minded towards them, especially such as by their enormous errors seem to be fallen into the fire of God's displeasure? Anger, wrath, fury, contempt towards such persons, men think to be their duty; more contrivances there are usually how they may be temporally destroyed, than how they may be eternally saved. But such men profess the truth as it were by chance. They never knew what it is to learn it aright, nor whence the knowledge of it is to be received, nor were ever under its power or conduct. Our proper work is to save such persons what lies in us, pulling them out of the fire. Duties of difficulty and danger unto ourselves may be required hereunto: It is easier if we had secular power with us to thrust men into temporal fire for their errors, than to free them from eternal fire by the truth. But if we were governed with compassion for their souls, and fear of their ruin, as it is our duty to be, we would not decline any office of love required thereunto.

3. Hath God led us into the truth, hath he kept us from every false way, it is evident that we have abundant cause of gratitude and fruitfulness. It is a condition more desperate than that of the most pernicious errors, to hold the truth in unrighteousness; and as good not to know the Lord Jesus Christ, as to be barren in the knowledge of him. It is not, we see, of ourselves, that we either know the truth, or love it, or abide in the profession of it. We have nothing of this kind but what we have received, humility in ourselves, usefulness towards others, and thankfulness unto God, ought to be the effect of this consideration.

This is the first general cause of men's misapprehension of the mind and will of God as revealed in the Scripture. The revelation itself is plain, perspicuous, and full of light. "But this light shineth into darkness, and the darkness comprehendeth it not." The natural darkness and blindness which is in the minds of men, with the vanity and instability which they are attended with, causeth them to wrest the Scriptures unto their own destruction. And for this sort of men to complain, as they do horribly in the Papacy, of the obscurity of the Scripture, is all one as if a company of blind men should cry out of an eclipse of the sun, when he shineth in his full strength and glory. How this darkness is removed and taken away by the effectual operation of the Holy Spirit in our illumination, I have elsewhere at large discoursed.

2. Corrupt affections prevalent in the minds of men do hinder them from a right understanding of the mind of God in the Scripture. For hereby they are effectually inclined to wrest and pervert the truth, or are filled with prejudices against it. This is the next cause of all ignorance and error, where we must seek for the particular causes of them before proposed. The principal reason why the generality of men attain not a right understanding of the mind and will of God in the Scripture, is the corrupt affections that are predominant in their own minds, whereby they are exposed unto all sorts of impressions and seductions from Satan and the agents for his kingdom and interest. So the apostle tells us, that "unlearned and unstable men do wrest the Scripture unto their own destruction," 2 Peter iii. 16. And another, that these "unlearned and unstable persons are men of corrupt minds," 1 Tim. vi. 5. 2 Tim. iii. 8. that is, such whose minds are peculiarly under the power of perverse and corrupt affections. For these affections are *δεινότης τε διάνοιας*, Ephes. ii. 3. the wills of the mind, such as carry it with an impetuous inclination towards their own satisfaction, and such as render it obstinate and perverse in its adherence thereto. These are the root of that filthiness and superfluity

of naughtiness which must be cast out before we can "receive the ingrafted word with meekness," Jam. i. 11. Some few of them may be named.

1. Pride or carnal confidence in our own wisdom and ability of mind for all the ends of our duty towards God, and this in especial of understanding his mind and will, either keeps the souls of men under the bondage of darkness and ignorance, or precipitates them into foolish apprehensions or pernicious errors. As spiritual pride is the worst sort of pride, so this is the worst degree of spiritual pride, namely, when men do not acknowledge God in these things as they ought, but lean unto their own understandings. This is that which ruined the Pharisees of old, that they could not understand the mind of God in any thing unto their advantage. It is the meek, the humble, the lowly in mind, those that are like little children, that God hath promised to teach. This is an eternal and unalterable law of God's appointment, that whoever will learn his mind and will as revealed in the Scripture, must be humble and lowly, renouncing all trust and confidence in themselves. And whatever men of another frame do come to know, they know it not according to the mind of God, nor according to their own duty, nor unto their advantage. Whatever knowledge they may have, however conspicuous it may be made by their natural and acquired abilities, however it may be garnished with a mixture of secular literature, whatever contempt it may raise them unto of others, such as the Pharisees had of the people, whom they esteemed accursed because they knew not the law, yet they knew nothing as they ought, nothing unto the glory of God, nothing to the spiritual advantage of their own souls; and wherein is their knowledge to be accounted of? Indeed the knowledge of a proud man is the throne of Satan in his mind. To suppose that persons under the predominancy of pride, self-conceit and self-confidence, can understand the mind of God as revealed in a due manner, is to renounce the Scripture or innumerable positive testimonies given in them unto the contrary,

such persons cannot make use of any one means of spiritual knowledge that God requires of them in a way of duty, nor improve any one truth which they may know, unto their good. Therefore our Saviour tells the proud Pharisees, notwithstanding all their skill in the letter and tittles of the Scripture, " That they had not heard the " voice of God at any time, nor seen his shape, neither " had they his word abiding in them," John v. 37, 38. They had no right knowledge of him, as he had revealed and declared himself.

Men infected with this leaven having their minds tainted with it have been the great corrupters of divine truth, in all ages. Such have been the ringleaders of all heresies, and such were they, who have turned the knowledge of the will of God proposed in the Scripture, into a wrangling science filled with niceties, subtleties, curiosities, fulvous terms of art, and other fuel for the minds of fiery contenders in wrangling disputationes.

And this kind of self-confidence is apt to befall all sorts of men. Those of the meanest capacity may be infected with it, no less than the wisest or most learned. And we frequently see persons, whose weakness in all sound knowledge, and insufficiency for the use of proper means unto the attaining of it, might seem to call them unto humility and lowliness of mind in an eminent manner, yet lifted up unto such a degree of spiritual pride and conceit of their own understandings, as to render them useless, troublesome, and offensive unto men of sober minds. But principally are they exposed hereunto, who either really, or in their own apprehensions, are exalted above others in secular learning, and natural or acquired abilities. For such men are apt to think that they must needs know the meaning of the Holy Ghost in the Scriptures better than others, or at least that they can do so, if they will but set themselves about it. But that which principally hinders them from so doing, is their conceit that so they do. They mistake that for divine knowledge which is in them the great obstruction of it.

2. The love of honour and praise among men is another corrupt affection of mind of the same nature and efficacy with that before named. This is so branded by our Saviour as an insuperable obstacle against the admission of sacred light and truth, that no more need be added thereunto, see John v. 44. chap. xii. 43.

Thirdly, a pertinacious adherence unto corrupt traditions, and inveterate errors quite shuts up the way unto all wisdom and spiritual understanding. This ruined the church of the Jews of old, and makes at present that of the Romaniits incurable. What their fore fathers have professed, what themselves have imbibed from their infancy, what all their outward circumstances are involved in, what they have advantage-by, what is in reputation with those in whom they are principally concerned, that shall be the truth with them and nothing else. Unto persons whose minds are wholly vitiated with the leaven of this corrupt affection; there is not a line in the Scripture whose sense can be truly and clearly represented. All appears in the colour and figure that their prejudices frame in their minds. When the Lord Christ came forth first unto the preaching of the gospel, there "came a voice "from heaven saying, This is my beloved Son in whom "I am well pleased, hear him :" Matth. xvii. 5. Neither was this command given unto them alone who heard it immediately from the excellent glory, as Peter speaks, 2 Pet. i. 17. but as recorded in the word, is given equally unto every one, that would learn any thing of the mind and will of God in a due manner. No man can learn but by the hearing of him; unto him are we sent for the learning of our spiritual knowledge. And no other way doth he speak unto us but by his word and Spirit. But where the minds of men are prepossessed with apprehensions of what they have received from the authority of other teachers, they have neither desire, design, readiness, nor willingness to hear him. But if men will not forego all pre-imbibed opinions, prejudices and conceptions of mind, however riveted into them by traditions, custom, ve-

neration of elders, and secular advantages, to hearken unto and receive whatever he shall speak unto them, and that with an humble, lowly frame of heart, they will never learn the truth, nor attain a full assurance of understanding in the mysteries of God. These inveterate prejudices, are at this day those which principally shut out the truth, and set men together by the ears all the world over about religion and the concerns thereof. Hence is all the strife, rage, tumult, and persecution that the world is filled withal. Could men but once agree to lay down all those presumptions which either wit or learning, or custom, or interest and advantage have influenced them withal, at the feet of Jesus Christ, and resolve in sincerity to comply with that alone which he doth teach them, and to forego whatever is inconsistent therewith, the ways unto truth and peace would be more laid open than otherwise they are like to be.

Fourthly, Spiritual sloth is of the same nature, and produceth the same effect. The Scripture frequently giveth us in charge to use the utmost of our diligence in the search of, and for the finding out of spiritual truth, proposing unto us the example of those that have done so before, Jof. i. 8. Psal. i. 1. Prov. ii. 2, 3, 4, 5, 6. John. v. 39; 1 Pet. i. 11, 12. And any rational man would judge that if it had not been so expressly given us in charge from God himself, if it had not been a means appointed and sanctified unto this end, yet that the nature of the thing itself, with its importance unto our duty and blessedness, are sufficient to convince us of its necessity. It is truth, it is heavenly truth we enquire after; that on the knowledge or ignorance whereof, our eternal blessedness or misery doth depend. And in a due perception therof alone, are the faculties of our minds perfected according to the measure which they are capable of in this life. Therein alone can the mind of man find rest, peace and satisfaction, and without it must always wander in restless uncertainties, and disquieting vanities. It is a notion implanted on the minds of all men, that all truth lies deep,

and that there is great difficulty in the attainment of it. The minds of most are imposed on by specious appearances of falsehood. Wherefore all wise men have agreed that without our utmost care and diligence in the investigation of the truth, we must be contented to walk in the shades of ignorance and error. And if it be thus in earthly things, how much more is it so in heavenly? As spiritual supernatural truth is incomparably to be valued above that which relates unto things natural; so it is more obscure, and of a more difficult investigation. But this folly is beset on the minds of the generality of men, that of all things they suppose there is least need of pains and diligence to be used, in an enquiry after those things which the angels themselves desire to bow down and look into, and which the prophets of old enquired and searched after with all diligence. Whatever be their notion hereof, yet practically it is evident, that most men through pride and sloth, and love of sin, are wholly negligent herein. At least they will not apply themselves to those spiritual means, without the use whereof the knowledge of divine truth will not be attained. It is generally supposed that men may be as wise in these things as they need to be, at a very easy rate. The folly of men herein can never be enough bewailed; they regard spiritual truth as if they had no concernment in it, beyond what custom and tradition puts them on, in reading chapters, or hearing sermons: They are wholly under the power of sloth, as unto any means of spiritual knowledge.

Some indeed will labour diligently in the study of those things which the Scripture hath in common with other arts and sciences; such are the languages wherein it was writ, the stories contained in it, the ways of arguing which it useth with scholastical accuracy in expressing the truth supposed to be contained in it. These things are great in themselves, but go for nothing when they are alone. Men under the utmost efficacy of spiritual sloth may be diligent in them, and make a great progress in their improvement. But they are spiritual objects and duties that

this sloth prevails to alienate the minds of men from, and make them negligent of; and what are those duties I shall afterwards manifest.

The consideration I say of the state of things in the world, gives so great an evidence of probability, that, what through the pride and self-conceit of the minds of many, refusing a compliance with the means of spiritual knowledge, and excluding all gracious qualifications indispensably required unto the attaining of it. What through the power of corrupt traditions, imprisoning the minds of men in a fatal adherence unto them, preventing all thoughts of an holy ingenious enquiry into the mind of God, by the only safe infallible revelation of it; and what through the power of spiritual sloth indisposing the minds of the most unto an immediate search of the Scripture; partly with apprehensions of its difficulty, and notions of learning the truth contained in it by other means; and what through a traditional course of studying divinity, as an art or science to be learned out of the writings of men; the number is very small of them who diligently, humbly, and conscientiously endeavour to learn the truth from the voice of God in the Scripture, or to grow wise in the mysteries of the gospel by such ways as wherein alone that wisdom is attainable. And is it any wonder, if many, the greatest number of men, wander after vain imaginations of their own or others, whilst the truth is neglected or despised?

5. Again, there is in the minds of men by nature a love of sin, which causeth them to hate the truth; and none can understand it but those that love it. In the visible church most men come to know of the truth of the gospel as it were whether they will or no. And the general design of it they find to be a separation between them and their sins. This sets them at a distance from it in affection, whereon they can never make any near approach unto it in knowledge or understanding. So we are assured, John iii. 19, 20. "Light is come into the world, " and men love darkness rather than light, because their

"deeds are evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh unto the light lest his deeds should be reproved." Persons under the power of this frame take up under the shades of ignorance, and corrupt imaginations. And if they should attempt to learn the truth, they would never be able so to do.

Lastly, Satan by his temptations and suggestions doth variously affect the minds of men, hindering them from discerning the mind of God as revealed in the Scripture. "The god of this world blinds the eyes of them that believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them," 2 Cor. iv. 4. The ways and means whereby he doth so, the instruments which he useth, the artifices and methods which he applieth unto his ends, with his application of himself unto them according unto all occasions, circumstances, opportunities, and provocations in great variety, were worth our enquiring into, but that we should too much digress from our present design.

I have but mentioned these things, and that as instances of the true original causes of the want of understanding, and misunderstanding of the revelation of the mind of God in the Scripture. Many more of the same nature might be added unto them, and their effectual operations unto the same end, be declared. But the mention of them here is only occasional, and such as will not admit of a farther discussion. But by these and the like depraved affections it is, that the original darkness and enmity of the minds of men against spiritual truth, and all the mysteries of it do exert themselves; and from them do all the error, superstition, and false worship that the world is filled withal, proceed. For

Whilst the minds of men are thus affected, as they cannot understand and receive divine spiritual truths, in a due manner, so are they ready and prone to embrace whatever is contrary thereunto. If therefore it be the work of the Spirit of God alone in the renovation of our minds to free them from the power of these vicious depraved habits,

and consequently the advantages that Satan hath against them thereby, there is an especial work of his necessary to enable us to learn the truth as we ought. And for those who have no regard unto these things, who suppose that in the study of the Scripture all things come alike unto all, to the clean, and to the unclean, to the humble and the proud, to them that hate the garments spotted with the flesh, and those that both love sin, and live in it, they seem to know nothing either of the design, nature, power, use or end of the gospel.

The removal of these hinderances and obstacles is the work of the Spirit of God alone. For

1. He alone communicates that spiritual light unto our minds, which is the foundation of all our relief against these obstacles of, and oppositions unto a saving understanding of the mind of God.

2. In particular he freeth, delivereth, and purgeth our minds from all those corrupt affections and prejudices, which are partly inbred in them, partly assumed by them, or imposed on them. For the artifice of Satan in turning the minds of men from the truth, is by bringing them under the power of corrupt and vicious habits, which expel that frame of spirit which is indispensably necessary unto them that would learn it. It is indeed our duty so to purify and purge ourselves. We are to cast out all "filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, that we may receive "the ingrafted word with meekness," James i. 21. "To "purge ourselves from these things, that we may be vef- "fels unto honour sanctified and meet for our Master's "use, and unto every good work," 2 Tim. ii. 21. If it be not thus with us, let the pride and folly of men pretend what they please, we can neither learn, nor know, nor teach the mind of God as we ought. And what men may do without giving glory unto God, or the bringing of any spiritual advantage unto their own souls, we enquire not, seeing it belongeth only equivocally unto Christian religion. But although it is our duty thus to purge ourselves, yet is it by the grace of the Holy Spirit that so

we do. Those who under a pretence of our own duty would exclude in any thing the efficacious operations of the Holy Ghost ; or on the other hand, on the pretence of his grace and its efficacy, would exclude the necessity of diligence in our duties, do admit but of one half of the gospel, rejecting the other. The whole gospel affirms and requireth them both unto every good act and work. Wherefore the purging of ourselves is that which is not absolutely in the power of our natural abilities. For these corrupt affections possess, and are predominant in the mind itself, and all its actings are suited unto their nature, and influenced by their power. It can never therefore by its own native ability free itself from them. But it is the work of this great Purifier and Sanctifier of the church, to free our minds from these corrupt affections, and inveterate prejudices, whereby we are alienated from the truth, and inclined unto all false conceptions of the mind of God. And unless this be done, in vain shall we think to learn the truth as it is in Jesus. See 1 Cor. vi. 11. Tit. iii. 3, 4. Rom. viii. 13 Eph. iv. 20, 21, 22, 23, 24.

3. He implants in our minds spiritual habits and principles contrary and opposite unto those corrupt affections, whereby they are subdued and expelled. By him are our minds made humble, meek, and teachable, through a submission unto the authority of the word, and a conscientious endeavour to conform ourselves thereunto.

It was always agreed that there were ordinarily preparations required unto the receiving of divine illuminations ; and in the assignation of them many have been greatly deceived. Hence some in the expectation of receiving divine revelations, have been imposed on by diabolical delusions, which by the working of their imaginations they had prepared their minds to give an easy admission unto. So was it among the heathen of old, who had invented many ways unto this purpose, some of them horrid and dreadful. And so it is still with all enthusiasts. But God himself hath plainly declared what are the qualifications of those souls, which are meet to be made partakers of di-

vine teachings; or ever shall be so. And these are, as they are frequently expressed, meekness, humility, godly fear, reverence, submission of soul and conscience unto the authority of God, with a resolution and readiness for and unto all that obedience which he requireth of us, especially that which is internal in the hidden man of the heart. It may be some will judge that we wander very far from the matter of our enquiry; namely, how we may come unto the knowledge of the mind of God in the Scripture, or we may aright understand the Scripture, when we assign these things as means thereof, or preparations therunto. For although these are good things, (for that cannot be denied) yet it is ridiculous to urge them as necessary unto this end, or of any use for the attaining of it. Learning, arts, tongues, sciences, with the rules of their exercise, and the advantage of ecclesiastical dignity, are the things that are of use herein, and they alone. The most of these things and sundry other of the same kind, we acknowledge to be of great use unto the end designed, in their proper place, and what is the due use of them shall be afterwards declared. But we must not forego what the Scripture plainly instructeth us in, and which the nature of the things themselves doth evidence to be necessary, to comply with the arrogance and fancy of any, or to free ourselves from their contempt.

It is such an understanding of the Scripture, of the divine revelation of the mind of God therein, as wherein the spiritual illumination of our minds doth consist, which we enquire after; such a knowledge as is useful and profitable unto the proper ends of the Scripture towards us, that which we are taught of God, that we may live unto him. These are the ends of all true knowledge. See 2 Tim. iii. 14, 15, 16, 17. And for this end the furnishment of the mind with the graces before mentioned is the best preparation. He bids defiance unto the gospel by whom it is denied. "God resisteth the proud; but giveth grace to the humble." Whatever be the parts or abilities of men, whatever diligence they may use in the investigation of

the truth, whatever disciplinary knowledge they may attain thereby, the Spirit of God never did, nor ever will, instruct a proud unhumbled soul in the right knowledge of the Scripture as it is a divine revelation. It is by these gracious qualifications alone whereby we may be enabled to cast out all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, so as to receive the ingrafted word with meekness, which is able to save our souls.

Our blessed Saviour tells us, “that unless we be converted, and become as little children, we cannot enter into the kingdom of Heaven,” Mat. xviii. 3. We cannot do so, unless we become humble, meek, tender, weaned from high thoughts of ourselves, and are purged from prejudices by corrupt affections. And I value not that knowledge which will not conduct us into the kingdom of heaven, or which shall be thence excluded. So God hath promised that “the meek he will guide in judgment, “the meek he will teach his way; the secret of the Lord “is with them that fear him, and he will shew them his “covenant; and what man is he that feareth the Lord, “him shall he teach in the way,” Psal. xxv. 9, 12, 14. And so we are told plainly that “evil men understand not “judgment, but they that fear the Lord understand all “things,” Prov. xxviii. 5.

Now all these graces whereby men are made teachable, capable of divine mysteries, so as to learn the truth as it is in Jesus, to understand the mind of God in the Scriptures, are wrought in them by the Holy Spirit, and belong unto his work upon our minds in our illumination. Without this the hearts of all men are fat, their ears heavy, and their eyes sealed, that they can neither hear, nor perceive nor understand the mysteries of the kingdom of God.

These things belong unto the work of the Holy Spirit upon our minds: (as also sundry other instances might be given unto the same purpose) in our illumination, or his enabling of us rightly to understand the mind of God in the Scripture. But whereas whoever is thus

by him graciously prepared and disposed, shall be taught in the knowledge of the will of God, so far as he is concerned to know it in point of duty, if so be he abide in the ordinary use of outward means, so there are sundry other things necessary unto the attaining of further useful degrees of this knowledge and understanding: whereof I shall treat afterwards.

CHAP. VI.

The work of the Holy Spirit in the composing and disposal of the Scripture as a means of sacred illumination; the perspicuity of the Scripture unto the understanding of the mind of God declared and vindicated.

THERE is yet another part of the work of the Holy Spirit with respect unto the illumination of our minds which must also be enquired into. And this concerneth the Scripture itself. For this he hath so given out, and so disposed of, as that it should be a moral way or means for the communication of divine revelations unto the minds of men. For this also is an effect of his infinite wisdom and care of the church, designing to enlighten our minds with the knowledge of God, he prepared apt instruments for that end. That therefore which we shall declare on this head of our discourse is, that the Holy Spirit of God hath prepared and disposed of the Scripture, so as it might be a most sufficient and absolutely perfect way and means of communicating unto our minds, that saving knowledge of God and his will which is needful that we may live unto him, and come unto the enjoyment of him in his glory. And here sundry things must be observed.

i. The Holy Spirit hath not in the Scripture reduced and disposed its doctrines or supernatural truths into any system, order or method. Into such a method are the principal of them disposed in our catechisms and systems

of divinity, creeds, and confessions of faith. For whereas the doctrinal truths of the Scripture have a mutual respect unto, and dependence on one another, they may be disposed into such an order to help the understandings and memories of men. There is indeed in some of the epistles of Paul, especially that unto the Romans, a methodical disposition of the most important doctrines of the gospel. And from thence are the best methods of our teaching borrowed. But in the whole Scripture there is no such thing aimed at. It is not distributed into common places, nor are all things concerning the same truth methodically disposed under the same head: but its contexture and frame is quite of another nature. From this consideration some think they have an advantage to charge the Scripture with obscurity; and do thereon maintain that it was never intended to be such a revelation of doctrines as should be the rule of our faith. Had it been so, the truths to be believed would have been proposed in some order unto us, as a creed, or confession of faith, that we might at once have had a view of them, and been acquainted with them. But whereas they are now left to be gathered out of a collection of histories, prophecies, prayers, songs, letters or epistles, such as the Bible is composed of, they are difficult to be found, hard to be understood, and never perfectly to be learned. And doubtless the way fancied would have been excellent had God designed to effect in us, only an artificial or methodical faith and obedience. But if we have a due regard unto the use of the Scripture and the ends of God therein, there is no weight in this objection. For

1. It is evident that the whole of it consists in the advancement of men's own apprehensions and imaginations against the will and wisdom of God. It is a sufficient reason to prove this the absolute best way for the disposal of divine revelations, because God hath made use of this and no other. One indeed is reported to have said, that had he been present at the creation of the universe, he would have disposed some things into a better order, than what they

are in. For vain man would be wise, though he be like the wild asses colt. And no wiser or better are the thoughts that the revelation of supernatural truths, might have been otherwise disposed of with respect unto the end of God, than as they are in the Scripture. God puts not such value upon men's accurate methods as they may imagine them to deserve. Nor are they so subservient unto his ends in the revelation of himself, as they are apt to fancy (yea, oft times when as they suppose they have brought truths unto the strictest propriety of expression, they lose both their power and their glory.) Hence is the world filled with so many lifeless, sapless, graceless, artificial declarations of divine truth in the schoolmen and others. We may sooner squeeze water out of a pumice stone, then one drop of spiritual nourishment out of them. But how many millions of souls have received divine light and consolation suited unto their condition in those occasional occurrences of truth which they meet withal in the Scripture, which they would never have obtained in those wise artificial disposals of them which some men would fancy. Truths have their power and efficacy upon our minds, not only from themselves, but from their posture in the Scripture. There are they placed in such aspects towards, in such conjunctions one with another, as that their influences on our minds do greatly depend thereon. He is no wise man, nor exercised in those things, who would part with any one truth out of its proper place where the Holy Spirit hath disposed and fixed it. The Psalmist faith of God's testimonies, they are יְהוָה עֲצָרָנוּ, "the men of his counsel," Psalm cxix. 24. And no man will make choice of a counsellor, all whose wisdom consists in sayings and rules cast into a certain order and method. He alone is a good counsellor, who out of the largeness and wisdom of his own heart and mind, can give advice according unto all present occasions and circumstances. Such counsellors are the testimonies of God. Artificial methodizing of spiritual truths, may make men ready in notions, cunning and subtle in disputation, but

it is the Scripture itself that is able to make us wise unto salvation.

2. In the writing and composing of the Holy Scripture, the Spirit of God had respect unto the various states and conditions of the church. It was not given for the use of one age or season only, but for all generations, for a guide in faith and obedience from the beginning of the world to the end of it. And the state of the church was not always to be the same, neither in light, knowledge, nor worship. God had so disposed of things in the eternal counsel of his will, that it should be carried on by various degrees of divine revelation unto its perfect estate. Hereunto is the revelation of his mind in the Scripture subservient and suited, Heb. i. 1. If all divine truths had from the first been stated and fixed in a system of do&trines, the state of the church must have been always the same, which was contrary unto the whole design of divine wisdom in those things.

3. Such a systematical proposal of do&trines, truths, or articles of faith as some require, would not have answered the great ends of the Scripture itself. All that can be supposed of benefit thereby, is only, that it would lead us more easily into a methodical comprehension of the truths so proposed. But this we may attain and not be rendered one jot more like unto God thereby. The principal end of the Scripture is of another nature. It is to beget in the minds of men, faith, fear, obedience and reverence of God, to make them holy and righteous; and those such as have in themselves various weaknesses, temptations, and inclinations unto the contrary, which must be obviated and subdued. Unto this end every truth is disposed of in the Scripture as it ought to be. If any expect that the Scripture should be written with respect unto opinions, notions and speculations, to render men skilfull and cunning in them, able to talk and dispute about all things and nothing, they are mistaken. It is given us to make us humble, holy, wise in spiritual things, to direct us in our duties, to relieve us against temptations, to comfort us un-

der troubles, to make us to love God and to live unto him, in all that variety of circumstances, occasions, temptations, trials, duties, which in this world we are called unto. Unto this end there is a more glorious power and efficacy in one epistle, one psalm, one chapter, than in all the writings of men, though they have their use also. He that hath not experience hereof, is a stranger unto the power of God in the Scripture. Sometimes the design and scope of the place, sometimes the circumstances related unto, mostly that spirit of wisdom and holiness which evidenceth itself in the whole, do effectually influence our minds. Yea sometimes an occasional passage in a story, a word or expression shall contribute more to excite faith and love in our souls, than a volume of learned disputation. It doth not argue, syllogize, or allure the mind; but enlightens, persuades, constrains the soul unto faith and obedience. This it is prepared for and suited unto.

4. The disposition of divine revelations in the Scripture is subservient unto other ends also of the wisdom of God towards the church, some of them may be named.

1. To render useful and necessary the great ordinance of the ministry. God hath not designed to instruct and save his church by any one outward ordinance only. The ways and means of doing good unto us, so as that all may issue in his own eternal glory, are known unto infinite wisdom only. The institution of the whole series and complex of divine ordinances, is no otherwise to be accounted for but by a regard and submission thereunto. Who can deny but that God might both have instructed, sanctified, and saved us, without the use of some or all of those institutions which he hath obliged us unto. His infinitely wise will is the only reason of these things. And he will have every one of his appointments on which he hath put his name to be honoured, such is the ministry. A means this is not co-ordinate with the Scripture, but subservient unto it. And the great end of it is, that those who are called thereunto, and are furnished with gifts for

the discharge of it, might diligently search the Scripture, and teach others the mind of God revealed therein. It was, I say, the will of God, that the church should ordinarily be always under the conduct of such a ministry. And his will it is, that those who are called thereunto, should be furnished with peculiar spiritual gifts, for the finding out and declaration of the truths that are treasured up in the Scripture, unto all the ends of divine revelation. See Ephes. iv. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16 2 Tim. iii. 14, 15, 16, 17. The Scripture therefore is such a revelation as doth suppose and make necessary this ordinance of the ministry, wherein and whereby God will also be glorified. And it were well if the nature and duties of this office were better understood than they seem to be. God hath accommodated the revelation of himself in the Scripture with respect unto them. And those by whom the due discharge of this office is despised or neglected, do sin greatly against the authority, wisdom and love of God. And those do no less by whom it is assumed, but not rightly understood, or not duly improved.

But it may be said, why did not the Holy Ghost dispose of all things so plainly in the Scripture, that every individual person might have attained the knowledge of them without the use of this ministry? I answer, (1.) It is a proud and foolish thing to enquire for any reasons of the ways and works of God, antecedent unto his own will. "He worketh all things according to the counsel of his will," Ephes. i. 11. and therein are we to acquiesce. Yet we may see the wisdom of what he hath done. As herein (1.) He would glorify his own power, in working great effects by vile weak means, 1 Cor. iii. 7. 2 Cor. iv. 7. (2.) He did it to magnify his Son Jesus Christ in the communication of spiritual gifts, Acts ii. 33. Ephes. iv. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12. (3.) To shew that in and by the work of his grace he designed not to destroy or contradict the faculties of our nature which at first he created; he would work on them, and work a change in them, by means suit-

ed unto their constitution and nature ; which is done in the ministry of the word, 2 Cor. v. 18, 19, 20.

2. The disposition of the Scripture respects the duty of all believers in the exercise of their faith and obedience, they know that all their light and direction, all their springs of spiritual strength and consolation are treasured up in the Scripture. But in the unspeakable variety of their occasions, they know not where every particular provision for these ends is stored. Hence it is their duty to meditate on the word night and day, to search for wisdom as silver, and to dig for it as for hidden treasure, "that they may understand "the fear of the Lord, and find the knowledge of God," Prov. ii. 3, 4, 5. And this being a duty whereunto the exercise of all grace is required, they are all improved thereby. The soul which is hereby engaged unto constant converse with God, will thrive more in that which is the proper end of the Scripture ; namely, the fear of the Lord, than it could do under any other kind of teaching.

3. A continual search into the whole Scripture, without a neglect of any part of it, is hereby rendered necessary ; and hereby are our souls prepared on all occasions, and influenced in the whole course of our obedience : For the whole and every part of the word is blessed unto our good, according to the prayer of our Saviour. " Sanctify them by thy truth, thy word is truth," John xvii. 17. There is power put forth in and by every part and parcel of it, unto our sanctification. And there is such a distribution of useful truths through the whole, that every where we may meet with what is prepared for us, and suited unto our condition. It is to me no small argument of the divine original of the Scripture, and of the presence of God in it, that there is no thought of our hearts with respect unto the proper end of the Scripture ; that is, our living unto God, so as to come unto the enjoyment of him, but that we shall find at one time or other, a due adjustment of it therein in one place or other.

There can no frame befall the hearts of believers, as unto spiritual things, whether it be as unto their thriving or decays, but there is a disposition of spiritual provision for it; and oft-times we shall find it then opening itself when we least looked for it. Powerful instructions as unto our practice do often arise out of circumstances, occasional words and expressions, all arguing an infinite wisdom in their provision, whereunto every future occurrence was in open view from eternity, and a present divine efficacy in the word's application of itself unto our souls. How often in the reading of it, do we meet with, and are, as it were, surprised with gracious words, that enlighten, quicken, comfort, endear, and engage our souls? How often do we find sin wounded, grace encouraged, faith excited, love inflamed, and this in that endless variety of inward frames and outward occasions, which we are liable unto? I shall say with confidence, that he never was acquainted with the excellency of the Scripture, with its power and efficacy in any holy experience, who is capable of fancying that divine revelations might have been disposed unto more advantage with respect unto our living unto God. And these things are sufficient for the removal of the objection before mentioned.

Secondly, The Holy Spirit hath so disposed of the Scripture, that the mind of God in all things concerning our faith and obedience, in the knowledge whereof our illumination doth consist, is clearly revealed therein. There needs no other argument to prove any thing not to belong unto our religion, than that it is not revealed, or appointed in the Scripture; no other to prove any truth not to be indispensably necessary unto our faith or obedience, than that it is not clearly revealed in the Scripture. But in this assertion we must take along with us these two suppositions.

I. That we look on the Scripture, and receive it not as the word of men, but as it is indeed the word of the living God. If we look for that perspicuity and clearness in the expression of divine revelation, which men endeavour to give unto the declaration of their minds in things

natural, by artificial methods and order, by the application of words and terms invented and disposed of on purpose to accommodate what is spoken unto the common notions and reasonings of men, we may be mistaken. Nor would it have become divine wisdom and authority to have made use of such methods, ways or arts. There is that plainness and perspicuity in it which becomes the holy wise God to make use of, whose words are to be received with reverence, with submission of mind and conscience unto his authority; and fervent prayer that we may understand his mind, and do his will. Thus all things are made plain unto the meanest capacity; yet not so, but if the most wise and learned do not see the characters of infinite divine wisdom, on things that seem most obvious and most exposed unto vulgar apprehensions, they have no true wisdom in them. In those very fords and appearing shallows of this river of God, where the lamb may wade, the elephant may swim: every thing in the Scripture is so plain, as that the meanest believer may understand all that belongs unto his duty, or is necessary unto his happiness; yet is nothing so plain, but that the wisest of them all have reason to adore the depths and stores of divine wisdom in it. All apprehensions of the obscurity of the Scripture arise from one of those two causes.

1. That the minds of men are prepossessed with opinions, dogmas, principles, and practices in religion, received by tradition from their fathers; or have vehement and corrupt inclinations, unto such ways, practices and opinions, as suit their carnal reason and interest. It is no wonder if such persons conceive the Scripture dark and obscure. For they can neither find that in it which they most desire, nor can understand what is revealed in it, because opposite unto their prejudices, affections and interests. The design of the Scripture is to destroy that frame of mind in them which they would have established. And no man is to look for light in the Scripture, to give countenance unto his own darkness.

2. It will appear obscure unto all men who come to the

reading and study of it in the mere strength of their own natural abilities. And it may be it is on this account that some have esteemed St. Paul one of the obscurest writers that ever they read. Wherefore as a book written in Greek or Hebrew must be obscure unto them who have no skill in those languages; so will the Scripture be unto all, who are unfurnished with those spiritual preparations which are required unto the right understanding of it. For,

2. It is supposed when we assert the clearness and perspicuity of the Scripture, that there is unto the understanding of it use made of that aid and assistance of the Spirit of God concerning which we do discourse. Without this the clearest revelations of divine supernatural things, will appear as wrapt up in darkness and obscurity: not for want of light in them, but for want of light in us. Wherefore by asserting the necessity of supernatural illumination, for the right understanding of divine revelation, we no way impeach the perspicuity of the Scripture. All things wherein our faith and obedience are concerned are clearly declared therein; howbeit when all is done, “the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, nor can know them,” until the eyes of his understanding be enlightened.

3. The Holy Spirit hath so disposed the Scripture, that notwithstanding that perspicuity which is in the whole with respect unto its proper end, yet are there in sundry parts or passages of it: (1.) *τινα δυστοντα*, some things hard to be understood: and (2.) *τινα δυσηγμενα*, some things hard to be uttered or interpreted. The former are the things themselves which are so in their own nature, the latter are so from the manner of their declaration.

1. There are in the Scripture, *τινα δυστοντα*, things deep, wonderful, mysterious, such as in their own nature do absolutely exceed the whole compass of our understanding or reason, as unto a full and perfect comprehension of them. Nor ought it to be strange unto any that sundry divine revelations should be of things in their

own nature incomprehensible. For as unto us, many earthly and natural things are so, as David affirms concerning the forming of our natures in the womb, Psalm xxxix. 5, 6, 14, 15, 16. And our Saviour assures us that heavenly things are much more above our comprehension than earthly, John iii. 12. Such as these are the Trinity, or the subsistence of one single divine nature in three persons; the incarnation of Christ, or the assumption of our human nature into personal union and subsistence with the Son of God; the eternal decrees of God, their nature, order, causes and effects; the resurrection of the dead, the manner of the operations of the Holy Spirit in forming the new creature in us, and sundry others. Our rational faculties in their utmost improvement in this world, and under the highest advantage they are capable of by spiritual light and grace, are not able with all their searchings to find out the Almighty unto perfection in these things. And in all disputes about the light of glory: as whether we shall be able thereby to behold the essence of God, to discern the depths of the mystery of the incarnation, and the like; men do but “darken counsel by “words without knowledge,” and talk of what they neither do nor can understand. But yet the wisdom of the Holy Spirit hath in these things two ways provided that we shall not suffer from our own weakness.

1. In that whatever is necessary for us to believe concerning these things is plainly and clearly revealed in the Scripture, and that revelation declared in such propositions and expressions as are obvious unto our understandings. And he who thinks we can believe nothing as unto its truth, but what we can comprehend as unto its nature, overthrows all faith and reason also. And propositions may be clear unto us in their sense, when their subject matter is incomprehensible. For instance, consider the incarnation of the Son of God, and the hypostatical union therein of the divine and human natures, it is a thing above our reason and comprehension. But in the Scripture it is plainly asserted and declared, that “the Word

" which is God, and was with God, was made flesh ;
" that God was manifest in the flesh, that the Son of God
" was made of a woman, made under the law, that he
" took on him the seed of Abraham ; that he came of the
" Jews according to the flesh, who is over all God blessed
" for ever; and that so God redeemed his church with his
" own blood." Thus plainly and perspicuously is this
great matter, as it is the object of our faith, as it is propos-
ed unto us to be believed, declared and expressed unto us.
If any one shall now say, that he will not believe that to
be the sense of these expressions, which the words do
plainly and undeniably manifest so to be, and are withal
incapable of any other sense or construction ; because he
cannot understand or comprehend the thing itself which
is signified thereby, it is plainly to say that he will believe
nothing on the authority and veracity of God revealing it ;
but what he can comprehend by his own reason that he
will believe ; which is to overthrow all faith divine. The
reason of our believing if we believe at all, is God's reve-
lation of the truth, and not our understanding of the na-
ture of the things revealed. Thereinto is our faith resolv-
ed, when our reason reacheth not unto the nature and
existence of the things themselves. And the work of the
Spirit it is, to bring into captivity unto the obedience of
the truth, every thought that might arise from our igno-
rance, or the impotency of our minds to comprehend the
things to be believed. And that new religion of Socinianism
which pretends to reduce all to reason, is wholly built
upon the most irrational principle that ever befell the minds
of men. It is this alone : What we cannot comprehend
in things divine and infinite as unto their own nature,
that we are not to believe in their revelation. On this
ground alone do the men of that persuasion reject the
doctrine of the Trinity, of the incarnation of the Son of
God, of the resurrection of the dead, and the like myste-
ries of faith. Whatever testimony the Scripture gives
unto them, because their reason cannot comprehend them,
they profess they will not believe them. A principle wild

and irrational, and which leads unto atheism, seeing the being of God itself is absolutely incomprehensible.

2. That degree of knowledge which we can attain in and about these things is every way sufficient with respect unto the end of the revelation itself. If they were so proposed unto us, as that if we could not fully comprehend them, we should have no benefit or advantage by them; the revelation itself would be lost, and the end of God frustrated therein. But this could not become divine wisdom and goodness to make such propositions unto us. For this defect ariseth not from any blameable depravation of our nature as corrupted, but from the very essence and being of it as created: For being finite and limited, it cannot perfectly comprehend things infinite. But whatever believers are able to attain unto, in that variety of the degrees of knowledge, which in their several circumstances they do attain, is sufficient unto the end whereunto it is designed; that is, sufficient to ingenerate, cherish, increase and preserve faith and love, and reverence with holy obedience in them, in such a way and manner as will assuredly bring them unto the end of all supernatural revelation in the enjoyment of God.

2. There are in the Scripture *τινὰ διαγνωνύμενα*: some things that are hard to be interpreted; not from the nature of the things revealed, but from the manner of their revelation. Such are many allegories, parables, mystical stories, allusions, unfulfilled prophecies and predictions, references unto the then present customs, persons and places, computation of times, genealogies, the signification of some single words seldom or but once used in the Scripture, the names of divers birds and beasts, unknown to us. Such things have a difficulty in them from the manner of their declaration. And it is hard to find out, and it may be in some instances impossible unto any determinate certainty, the proper genuine sense of them in the places where they occur. But herein also we have a relief provided in the wisdom of the Holy Spirit, in giving the

whole Scripture for our instruction, against any disadvantage unto our faith or obedience: For

(1.) Whatever is so delivered in any place, if it be of importance for us to know and believe as unto the ends of divine revelation, it is in some other place or places unveiled and plainly declared, so that we may say of it as the disciples said unto our Saviour; "Lo now he speaks 'plainly and not in parables.'" There can be no instance given of any obscure place or passage in the Scripture, concerning which a man may rationally suppose or conjecture, that there is any doctrinal truth requiring our obedience contained in it, which is not elsewhere explained. And there may be several reasons why the Holy Spirit chose to express his mind at any time in such ways as had so much obscurity attending of them. (1.) as for types, allegories, mystical stories, and obscure predictions, he made use of them on purpose under the Old Testament to draw a veil over the things signified in them, or the truths taught by them. For the church was not yet to be acquainted with the clear knowledge of the things concerning Jesus Christ and his mediation; they had not so much as a perfect image of the things themselves, but only an obscure shadow or representation of good things to come: Heb. x. 1. To have given unto them a full and clear revelation of all divine truths would have cast the whole design of God for the various states of the church, and the accomplishment of the great work of his grace and love, into disorder. It was not hard then for the church to be taught of old in types and allegories, but it was much grace and mercy that through them the light of the Sun of Righteousness so far beamed on them, as enabled them comfortably to wait until the day did break and the shadows flee away; as Cant. iv. 6. The fulness and glory of the revelation of grace and truth was reserved for Jesus Christ. God did them no wrong, but reserved better things for us, Heb. xi. last.

(1.) Whatever seems yet to be continued under any obscurity of revelation, it is so continued for the exercise of

our faith, diligence, humility and dependence on God, in our enquiries into them. And suppose we do not always attain precisely unto the proper and peculiar intendment of the Holy Spirit in them, as we can never search out his mind unto perfection, yet are there so many and great advantages to be obtained by the due exercise of those graces in the study of the word, that we can be no losers by any difficulties we can meet withal. The rule in this case is, that we affix no sense unto any obscure or difficult passage of Scripture, but what is materially true, and consonant unto other express and plain testimonies. For men to raise peculiar senses from such places, not confirmed elsewhere, is a dangerous curiosity.

(3.) As to sundry prophecies of future revolutions in the church and the world, like those in the Revelation, there was an indispensable necessity of giving them out in that obscurity of allegorical expressions and representations wherein we find them. For I could easily manifest, that as the clear and determinate declaration of future events in plain historical expressions, is contrary to the nature of prophecy : so in this case it would have been a means of bringing confusion on the works of God in the world, and of turning all men out of the way of their obedience. Their present revelation is sufficient to guide the faith, and regulate the obedience of the church so far as they are concerned in them.

4. Some things are in the Scripture disposed on purpose that evil, perverse, and proud men may stumble and fall at them, or be further hardened in their unbelief and obstinacy. So our Lord Jesus Christ affirms that he spake unto the stubborn Jews in parables that they might not understand. And whereas there must be heresies, that they which “are approved may be made manifest;” 1 Cor. xi. 19. and some “are of old ordained unto this condemnation,” Jude 4. Some things are so declared, that from them proud, perverse, and wrangling spirits may take occasion to wrest them unto their own destruction. The truths of Christ as well as his person, are appointed

to be a stone of stumbling and a rock of offence, yea a gin and a snare unto many. But this humble teachable believers are not concerned in.

2. The Holy Spirit hath given us a relief in this matter by supplying us with a rule of the interpretation of Scripture, which whilst we sincerely attend unto, we are in no danger of sinful corrupting the word of God, although we should not arrive unto its proper meaning in every particular place. And this rule is the analogy or proportion of faith. Let him that prophesieth, saith the apostle, that is, expoundeth the Scripture in the church, "do it according to the proportion of faith," Rom. xii. 6. And this analogy or proportion of faith, is what is taught plainly and uniformly in the whole Scripture, as the rule of our faith and obedience. When men will engage their enquiries into parts of the Scripture, mystical, allegorical, or prophetical, aiming to find out, it may be, things new and curious, without a constant regard unto this analogy of faith, it is no wonder if they wander out of the way and err concerning the truth, as many have done on that occasion. And I cannot but declare my detestation of those bold and curious conjectures; which without any regard unto the rule of prophecy many have indulged themselves in, on obscure passages in the Scripture. But now suppose a man brings no preconceived sense or opinion of his own unto such places, seeking countenance thereunto from them, which is the bane of all interpretation of the Scripture; suppose him to come in some measure prepared with the spiritual qualifications before mentioned, and in all his enquiries have a constant due regard unto the analogy of faith, so as not to admit of any sense which interfereth with what is elsewhere plainly declared, such a person shall not miss of the mind of the Holy Spirit; or if he do, shall be assuredly preserved from any hurtful danger in his mistakes. For there is that mutual relation, one to another, yea that mutual inbeing of all divine truths, in their proposal and revelation in the Scripture, as that every one of them is after a sort in every place, though not pro-

perly and peculiarly, yet by consequence and co-herence. Wherefore although a man should miss of the first proper sense of any obscure place of Scripture, which with all our diligence we ought to aim at; yet whilst he receiveth none but what contains a truth agreeable unto what is revealed in other places, the error of his mind neither endangereth his own faith or obedience, nor those of any others.

3. For those things which are peculiarly difficult, as genealogies, chronological computations of time, and the like, which are accidental unto the design of the Scripture, those who are able so to do unto their own edification or others may exercise themselves therein; and by all others, the consideration of them in particular, may be safely omitted.

And these are the heads of the work of the Holy Spirit on our minds, and on the Scriptures, considered distinctly and apart, with reference unto the right understanding of the mind of God in them. By the former sort our minds are prepared to understand the Scripture; and by the latter Scripture is prepared and suited unto our understandings. There yet remains the consideration of what he doth, or what help he affords unto us, in the actual application of our minds unto the understanding and interpretation of the word. And this respecteth the means which we are to make use of unto that end and purpose, and these also shall be briefly declared.

CHAP. VII.

Means to be used for the right understanding of the mind of God in the Scripture. Those which are prescribed in a way of duty.

THE means to be used for the right understanding and interpretation of the Scripture are of two sorts. (1.) That which is general and absolutely necessary; (2.) Such

as consist in the due improvement thereof. The first is diligent reading of the Scripture with a sedate, rational consideration of what we read. Nothing is more frequently recommended unto us ; and, not to insist on particular testimonies, the whole cxix. Psalm., is spent in the declaration of this duty, and the benefits which are attained thereby. Herein consists the first natural exercise of our minds in order unto the understanding of it. So the Eunuch read and pondered on the prophecy of Isaiah, though of himself he could not attain the understanding of what he read, Acts viii. 30, 31. Either reading, or that which is equivalent thereunto, is that whereby we do, and without which it is impossible we should apply our minds to know what is contained in the Scriptures. And this is that which all other means are designed to render useful. Now by this reading I understand that which is stayed, sedate, considerative, with respect unto the end aimed at ; reading attended with a due consideration of the things read, enquiry into them, meditation on them, with a regard unto the design and scope of the place, with all other advantages for the due investigation of the truth.

Frequent reading of the word more generally and cursorily, whereunto all Christians ought to be trained from their youth, (2 Tim iii. 15.) and which all closets and families should be acquainted withal. (Deut. vi. 6, 7, 8, 9.) is of great use and advantage ; and I shall therefore name some particular benefits which may be received thereby.

1. Hereby the minds of men are brought into a general acquaintance with the nature and design of the Book of God, which come to their present shame, and future ruin, are prodigiously ignorant of.

2. They who are exercised herein, come to know distinctly what things are treated of in the particular books and passages of it ; whilst others who live in a neglect of this duty, scarce know what books are historical, what prophetical, or what doctrinal in the whole Bible.

3. Hereby they exercise themselves unto thoughts of heavenly things, and an holy converse with God ; if they

bring along with them as they ought, hearts humble and sensible of his authority in the word.

4. Their minds are insensibly furnished with due conceptions about God, spiritual things, themselves, and their conditions; and their memories with expressions proper and meet to be used about them in prayer or otherways.

5. God oftentimes takes occasion herein, to influence their souls with the efficacy of divine truth in particular, in the way of exhortation, reproof, instruction or consolation, whereof all who attend diligently unto this duty have experience.

6. They come by reason of use to have their senses exercised to discern good and evil, so that if any noxious or corrupt sense of any place of the Scripture be suggested unto them, they have in reading wherewith to oppose it, from other places from whence they are instructed in the truth.

And many other advantages there are which men may reap from the constant reading of the Scripture, which I therefore reckon as a general means of coming to the knowledge of the mind of God therein. But this is not that which at present I especially intend. Wherefore

By this reading of the Scripture, I mean the studying of it in the use of means to come to a due understanding of it in particular places. For it is about the means of the solemn interpretation of the Scripture that we now enquire. Hereunto I say the general study of the whole, and in particular the places to be interpreted is required. It may seem altogether needless and impertinent to give this direction, for the understanding of the mind of God in the Scripture, namely, that we should read and study it to that end. For who can imagine how it should be done otherwise. But I wish the practice of many, it may be of the most, did not render this direction, necessary. For in their design to come to the knowledge of spiritual things, the direct immediate study of the Scripture, is that which they least of all apply themselves unto. Other writings they will read and study with diligence. But their read-

ing of the Scripture is for the most part superficial, without that intention of mind and spirit, that use and application of means which are necessary unto the understanding of it, as the event doth manifest. It is the immediate study of the Scripture that I intend. And hereunto I do refer, (1.) A due consideration of the analogy of faith always to be retained. (2.) A due examination of the design and scope of the place. (3.) A diligent observation of antecedents and consequents, with all those general rules which are usually given as directions in the interpretation of the Scripture. This therefore in the diligent exercise of our minds and reasons is the first general outward means of knowing the mind of God in the Scripture, and the interpretation thereof.

2. The means designed for the improvement hereof, or our profitable use of it are of three sorts. 1. Spiritual. 2. Disciplinary. 3. Ecclesiastical. Some instances on each head will further clear what I intend.

(1.) The first thing required as a spiritual means is prayer. I intend fervent and earnest prayer for the assistance of the Spirit of God, revealing the mind of God as in the whole Scripture, so in particular books and passages of it. I have proved before, that this is both enjoined and commanded unto us by the practice of the prophets and apostles. And this also by the way invincibly proves, that the due investigation of the mind of God in the Scripture, is a work above the utmost improvement of natural reason, with all outward advantages whatsoever. For were we sufficient of ourselves without immediate divine aid and assistance for this work, why do we pray for them? With which argument the ancient church perpetually urged the Pelagians, as to the necessity of saving grace. And it may be justly supposed that no man who professeth himself a Christian, can be so forsaken of all sobriety, as once to question whether this be the duty of every one who hath either desire or design to attain any real knowledge of the will of God in the Scripture. But the practical neglect of this duty is the true reason why

so many that are skilful enough in the disciplinary means of knowledge, are yet such strangers to the true knowledge of the mind of God. And this prayer is of two sorts.

1. That which respects the teaching of the Spirit in general, whereby we labour in our prayers, that he would enlighten our minds, and lead us into the knowledge of the truth, according to the work before described. The importance of this grace unto our faith and obedience, the multiplied promises of God concerning it, our necessity of it from our natural weakness, ignorance and darkness, should render it a principal part of our daily supplications. Especially is this incumbent on them who are called in an especial manner, to search the Scriptures, and to declare the mind of God in them unto others. And great are the advantages which a conscientious discharge of this duty with a due reverence of God brings along with it. Prejudices, preconceived opinions, engagements by secular advantages, false confidences, authority of men, influences from parties and societies, will be all laid level before it, at least be gradually exterminated out of the minds of men thereby. And how much the casting out of all this old leaven tends to prepare the mind for, and to give it a due understanding of divine revelations, hath been proved before. I no way doubt but that the rise and continuance of all these enormous errors which so infest Christian religion, and which many seek so sedulously to confirm from the Scripture itself, are in a great measure to be ascribed unto the corrupt affections with the power of tradition, and influences of secular advantages, which cannot firm their station in the minds of them who are constant sincere suppliants at the throne of grace, to be taught of God what is his mind and will in his word. For it includes a prevailing resolution sincerely to receive what we are so instructed in, whatever effects it may have upon the inward or outward man. And this is the only way to preserve our souls under the influences of divine teachings, and the irradiation of the Holy Spirit, without which we can

neither learn, nor know any thing as we ought. I suppose therefore this may be fixed on as a common principle of Christianity, namely, that constant and fervent prayer for the divine assistance of the Holy Spirit, is such an indispensable means for the attaining the knowledge of the mind of God in the Scripture, as that without it all others will not be available.

Nor do I believe that any one who doth, and can thus pray as he ought in a conscientious study of the word, shall ever be left unto the final prevalency of any pernicious error; or the ignorance of any fundamental truth. None utterly miscarry in the seeking after the mind of God, but those who are perverted by their own corrupt minds. Whatever appearance there be of sincerity and diligence in seeking after truth, if men miscarry therein, it is far more safe to judge, that they do so, either through the neglect of this duty, or indulgence unto some corruption of their hearts and minds, than that God is wanting to reveal himself unto those that diligently seek him. And there are unfailing grounds of this assurance. For (1.) Faith exercised in this duty will work out all that "filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness," which would hinder us so to receive the ingrafted word with meekness, as that it should save our souls. (2.) It will work in the mind those gracious qualifications of humility and meekness, whereunto the teachings of God are promised in an especial manner, as we have shewed. And (3.) Our Saviour hath assured us, that his "heavenly Father will give the Holy Spirit unto them that ask him," Luke xi. 13. Neither is any supplication for the Holy Spirit more acceptable unto God, than that which designs the knowledge of his mind and will that we may do them. (4.) All those graces which render the mind teachable, and meet unto the reception of heavenly truths, are kept up unto a due exercise therein. If we deceive not ourselves in these things, we cannot be deceived. For in the discharge of this duty those things are learned in their power, whereof we have the notion only in other means of instruction. And here-

by whatever we learn, is so fixed upon our minds, possesteth them with such a power, transforming them into the likeness of it, as that they are prepared for the communication of farther light, and increases in the degrees of knowledge.

Nor can it be granted on the other hand; that any sacred truth is learned in a due manner, whatever diligence be used in its acquisition; or that we can know the mind of God in the Scripture in any thing as we ought, when the management of all other means which we make use of unto that end, is not committed unto the hand of this duty. The apostle desiring earnestly that those unto whom he wrote, and whom he instructed in the mysteries of the gospel, might have a due spiritual understanding of the mind of God, as revealed and taught in them, prays with all fervency of mind, that they might have a “communication of the Spirit of wisdom and revelation from above” to enable them thereunto, Eph. i. 17, 18, 19. chap. iii. 14, 15, 16, 17. For without this he knew it could not be attained. That which he did for them, we are obliged to do for ourselves. And where this is neglected, especially considering that the supplies of the Spirit unto this purpose are confined unto them that ask him, there is no ground of expectation, that any one should ever learn the saving knowledge of the mind of God in a due manner.

I shall therefore fix this assertion as a sacred truth. Whoever in the diligent and immediate study of the Scripture to know the mind of God therein so as to do it, doth abide in fervent supplications in and by Jesus Christ for supplies of the Spirit of grace, to lead him into all truth, to reveal and make known unto him the truth as it is in Jesus, to give him an understanding of the Scriptures, and the will of God therein, he shall be preserved from pernicious errors, and attain that degree in knowledge, as shall be sufficient unto the guidance and preservation of the life of God, in the whole of his faith and obedience. And more security of truth there is herein, than in men's

giving themselves up unto any other conduct in this world whatever. The goodness of God, his faithfulness in being the rewarder of them that diligently seek him, the command of this duty unto this end, the promises annexed unto it, with the whole nature of religion, do give us the highest security herein. And although these duties cannot but be accompanied with a conscientious care and fear of errors and mistakes, yet the persons that are found in them, have no ground of troublesome thoughts or fearful suspicions, that they shall be deceived or fail in the end they aim at.

(2.) Prayer respects particular occasions, or especial places of Scripture, whose exposition or interpretation we enquire after. This is the great duty of a faithful interpreter, that which in, with, and after the use of all means, he betakes himself unto. An experience of divine guidance and assistance herein, is that which unto some is invaluable; however by others it be despised. But shall we think it strange for a Christian, when it may be after the use of all other means, he finds himself at a loss about the true meaning and intention of the Holy Spirit in any place or text of Scripture, to betake himself in a more than ordinary manner unto God by prayer, that he would by his Spirit enlighten, guide, teach, and so reveal the truth unto him: or should we think it strange that God should hear such prayers, and instruct such persons in the secrets of his covenant? God forbid there should be such atheistical thoughts in the minds of any, who would be esteemed Christians. Yea I must say, that for a man to undertake the interpretation of any part or portion of Scripture in a solemn manner, without invocation of God to be taught and instructed by his Spirit, is an high provocation of him. Nor shall I expect the discovery of truth from any one who so proudly and ignorantly engageth in a work so much above his ability to manage. I speak this of solemn and stated interpretations; for otherwise a scribe ready furnished for the kingdom of God, may as he hath occasion, from the spiritual light and understanding where-

with he is endued, and the stores he hath already received, declare the mind of God unto the edification of others. But this is the first means to render our studying of the Scripture useful and effectual unto the end aimed at.

This (as was said) is the sheet anchor of a faithful expositor of the Scripture, which he betakes himself unto in all difficulties. Nor can he without it be led into a-comfortable satisfaction, that he hath attained the mind of the Holy Ghost in any divine revelation. When all other helps fail, as he shall in most places find them to do, if he be really intent on the disquisition of truth, this will yield him his best relief. And so long as this is attended unto, we need not fear farther useful interpretations of the Scripture, or the several parts of it, than as yet have been attained unto by the endeavours of others. For the stores of truth laid up in it, are inexhaustible. And hereby will they be opened unto those that enquire into them with humility and diligence. The labours of those who have gone before us, are of excellent use herein. But they are yet very far from having discovered the depths of this vein of wisdom. Nor will the best of our endeavours prescribe limits and bounds to them that shall come after us. And the reason why the generality of expositors go in the same track one after another, seldom passing beyond the beaten path of former endeavours, unless it be in some excursions of curiosity, is the want of giving up themselves unto the conduct of the Holy Spirit in the diligent performance of this duty.

Secondly; Readiness to receive impressions from divine truths as revealed unto us, conforming our minds and hearts unto the doctrine made known, is another means unto the same end. This is the first end of all divine revelations of all heavenly truths, namely, to beget the image and likeness of themselves in the minds of men, Rom. vi. 17. 2 Cor. iii. 18. And we miss our aim if this be not the first thing we intend in the study of the Scripture. It is not to learn the form of the doctrine of godliness, but to get the power of it implanted in our souls. And this is an eminent means of our making a progress in the

knowledge of the truth. To seek after mere notions of truth, without an endeavour after an experience of its power in our hearts, is not the way to encrease our understanding in spiritual things. He alone is in a posture to learn from God, who sincerely gives up his mind, conscience and affections to the power and rule of what is revealed unto him. Men may have in their study of the Scripture other ends also, as the profit and edification of others. But if this conforming of their own souls unto the power of the word, be not fixed in the first place in their minds, they do not strive lawfully, nor will be crowned. And if at any time when we study the word, we have not this design expressly in our minds, yet if upon the discovery of any truth, we endeavour not to have the likeness of it in our own hearts, we lose our principal advantage by it.

Thirdly; Practical obedience in the course of our walking before God, is another means unto the same end. The gospel is the "truth which is according unto godliness," Tit. i. 1. And it will not long abide with any who follow not after godliness according unto its guidance and direction. Hence we see so many to lose that very understanding which they had of the doctrines of it, when once they begin to give up themselves to ungodly lives. The true notion of holy evangelical truths will not live, at least not flourish, where they are divided from an holy conversation. As we learn all to practice, so we learn much by practice. There is no practical science which we can make any great improvements of, without an assiduous practice of its theorems. Much less is wisdom, such as is the understanding of the mysteries of the Scripture to be increased, unless a man be practically conversant about the things which it directs unto.

And herein alone we can come unto the assurance, that what we know and learn is indeed the truth. So our Saviour tells us, "That if any man do the will of God, he shall know of the doctrine whether it be of God," John vii. 17. Whilst men learn the truth only in the notion of

it, whatever conviction of its being so it is accompanied withal, they will never attain stability in their minds concerning it, nor come to the full assurance of understanding, unless they continually exemplify it in their own obedience, doing the will of God. This is that which will give them a satisfactory persuasion of it. And hereby will they be led continually into farther degrees of knowledge. For the mind of man is capable of receiving continual supplies in the encrease of light and knowledge whilst it is in this world, if so be they are improved unto their proper end in obedience unto God. But without this the mind will be quickly stuffed with notions, so that no streams can descend into it from the fountain of truth.

Fourthly; A constant design for growth, and a progress in knowledge, out of love to the truth, and experience of its excellency, is useful, yea needful unto the right understanding of the mind of God in the Scriptures. Some are quickly apt to think, that they know enough, as much as is needful for them; some that they know all that is to be known, or have a sufficient comprehension of all the counsels of God as revealed in the Scripture, or as they rather judge of the whole body of divinity in all the parts of it, which they may have disposed into an exact method with great accuracy and skill. No great or useful discoveries of the mind of God, shall I expect from such persons. Another frame of heart and Spirit is required in them who design to be instructed in the mind of God, or to learn it in the study of the Scripture. Such persons look upon it as a treasury of divine truths absolutely unfathomable by any created understandings. The truths which they receive from thence, and comprehend according to their measure therein, they judge amiable, excellent and desirable above all earthly things. For they find the fruit, benefit and advantage of them, in strengthening the life of God in them, conforming their souls unto him, communicating of his light, love, grace and power unto them.

This makes them with purpose of heart continually to

press in the use of all means to “ increase in this wisdom, “ to grow in the knowledge of God and our Lord and Sa-“ viour Jesus Christ.” They are pressing on continually unto that measure of perfection which in this life is attainable. And every new beam of truth whereby their minds are enlightened, guides them into fresh discoveries of it. This frame of mind is under a promise of divine teach-ings, Hos. vi. 3. “ Then shall we know; if we follow “ on to know the Lord.” “ If thou criest after know-“ ledge, and liftest up thy voice for understanding; if thou “ seekest her as silver, and searhest for her as for hid “ treasure, then shalt thou understand the fear of the “ Lord, and find the knowledge of God.” Prov. ii. 3, 4, 5, 6. When men live in an holy admiration of, and complacency in God, as the God of truth, as the first infinite essential truth, in whose enjoyment alone there is fulness of all satisfactory light and knowledge; when they adore the fulness of those revelations of himself which with infinite wisdom he hath treasured up in the Scrip-tures; when they find by experience an excellency, pow-er, and efficacy in what they have attained unto, and out of a deep sense of the smallness of their measures, of the meanness of their attainments, and how little a portion it is they know of God, do live in a constant design to abide with faith and patience in continual study of the word, and enquiries into the mind of God therein, they are in the way of being taught by him, and learning of his mind, unto all the proper ends of its revelation.

Fifthly; There are sundry ordinances of spiritual wor-ship which God hath ordained as a means of our illumina-tion: A religious attendance whereunto is required of them who intend to grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

And this is the first head of means for the due improve-ment of our endeavours, in reading and studying of the Scriptures, that we may come thereby unto a right under-standing of the mind of God in them, and be able to in-terpret them unto the use and benefit of others. What is,

the work of the Holy Spirit herein, what is the aid and assistance which he contributes hereunto, is so manifest from what we have discoursed, especially concerning his operations in us as a Spirit of grace and supplication, (not yet made public) that it must not here be insisted on.

It may be these means will be despised by some, and the proposal of them to this end looked on as weak and ridiculous, if not extremely fanciful. For it is supposed that these things are pressed to no other end but to decry learning, study, and the use of reason in the interpretation of the Scriptures, which will quickly reduce all religion into enthusiasm. Whether there be any thing of truth in this suggestion shall be immediately discovered. Nor have those by whom these things are pressed the least reason to decline the use of learning or any rational means in their proper place, as though they were conscious to themselves of a deficiency in them with respect unto those by whom they are so highly, and indeed for the most part vainly pretended unto.

But in the matter in hand, we must deal with some confidence. They by whom these things are decried, by whom they are denied to be necessary means for the right understanding of the mind of God in the Scriptures, do plainly renounce the chief principles of Christian religion. For although the Scripture hath many things in common with other writings wherein secular arts and sciences are declared; yet to suppose that we may attain the sense and mind of God in them, by the mere use of such ways and means as we apply in the investigation of truths of other natures, is to exclude all consideration of God, of Jesus Christ, of the Holy Spirit, of the end of the Scriptures themselves, of the nature and use of the things delivered in them, and by consequent to overthrow all religion; see Prov. xxviii. 5.

And this first sort of means which we have hitherto insisted on, are duties in themselves as well as means unto farther ends. And all duties under the gospel are the ways and means wherein, and whereby the graces of God

are exercised. For as no grace can be exerted or exercised, but in a way of duty, so no duty is evangelical or accepted with God, but what especial grace is exercised in. As the word is the rule whereby they are guided, directed and measured; so the acting of grace in them, is that whereby they are quickened, without which the best duties are but dead works. Materially they are duties, but formally they are sins. In their performance therefore as gospel duties, and as they are accepted with God, there is an especial aid and assistance of the Holy Spirit. And on that account there is so in the interpretation of the Scriptures. For if without his assistance we cannot make use aright of the means of interpreting of the Scripture, we cannot interpret the Scripture without it. The truth is, they who shall either say, that these duties are not necessarily required unto them who would search the Scripture, and find out the mind of God for their own edification, or so as to expound those oracles of God unto others; or that they may be performed in a manner acceptable unto God, and usefully unto this end, without the especial assistance of the Holy Spirit, do impiously what lies in them evict the whole doctrine of the gospel, and the grace thereof.

That which in the next place might be insisted on, is the consideration of the especial rules which have been, or may yet be given for the right interpretation of the Scriptures. Such are they which concern the stile of the Scripture, its especial phraseology, the tropes and figures it makes use of, the way of its arguing, the times and seasons wherein it was written, or the several parts of it; the occasions under the guidance of the Spirit of God given thereunto, the design and scope of particular writers, with what is peculiar unto them in their manner of writing, the comparing of several places, as to their difference in things and expressions, the reconciliation of seeming contradictions, with other things of an alike nature. But as the most of these may be reduced unto what hath been spoken before, about the disposal and perspicuity of the Scrip-

ture, so they have been already handled by many others at large, and therefore I shall not here insist upon them, but speak only unto the general means that are to be applied unto the same end.

C H A P. VIII.

*The second sort of means for the interpretation of the Scripture,
which are disciplinarian.*

THE second sort of means I call disciplinarian, as consisting in the due use and improvement of common arts and sciences, applied unto, and made use of in the study of the Scriptures. And these are things which have no moral good in themselves, but being indifferent in their own nature, their end, with the manner of their management thereunto, is the only measure and standard of their worth and value. Hence it is that in the application of them unto the interpretation of the Scripture, they may be used aright, and in a due manner, and they may be abused to the great disadvantage of them who use them; and accordingly it hath fallen out. In the first way they receive a blessing from the Spirit of God, who alone prospereth every good and honest endeavour in any kind; and in the latter they are efficacious to seduce men unto a trust in their own understandings, which in other things is foolish, and in these things pernicious.

That which of this sort I prefer in the first place, is the knowledge of, and skill in the languages wherein the Scripture was originally written. For the very words of them therein, were peculiarly from the Holy Ghost, which gives them to be אמית רכוי, words of truth, and the Scripture itself to be בראכה ישר, a right, or upright, or perfect writing, Eccl. xii. 12. The Scriptures of the Old Testament were given unto the church whilst it was entirely confined unto one nation, Psal. cxlvii. 19. Thence they were

all written in that language, which was common among, and peculiar unto that nation ; and this language, as the people itself was called *Hebrew*, from Heber the son of Salah, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem, their most eminent progenitor, Gen. x. 23, 24. For being the one original tongue of mankind, it remained in some part of his family, who probably joined not in the great apostacy of the world from God, nor was concerned in their dispersion at the building of Babel, which ensued thereon. The derivation of that name from another original, is a fruit of curiosity and vain conjecture, as I have elsewhere demonstrated.

In process of time that people were carried into captivity out of their own land, and were thereby forced to learn, and use a language somewhat different from their own ; another absolutely it was not, yet so far did it differ from it, that those who knew and spoke the one commonly could not understand the other, 2 Kings xviii. 26. This was *לְשׁוֹן בָּסָרִים*, Dan. i. 4. the language of the Chaldeans, which Daniel and others learned. But by the people's long continuance in that country, it became common to them all. After this some parts of the books of the Scripture, as of Daniel and Ezra, were written in that language, as also one verse in the prophecy of Jeremiah, when they were ready to be carried thither, in which he instructs the people how to reproach the idols of the nations in their own language, Jer. x. 11. The design of God was that his word should be always read and used in that language, which was commonly understood by them unto whom he granted the privilege thereof, nor could any of the ends of his wisdom and goodness in that merciful grant, be otherwise attained.

The prodigious conceit of keeping the Scripture, which is the foundation, rule and guide of the whole church, the spiritual food and means of life unto all the members of it, by the church, or those who pretend themselves intrusted with the power and rights of it, in a language unknown unto the community of the people, had not

then befallen the minds of men, no more than it hath yet any countenance given unto it, by the authority of God, or reason of mankind. And indeed the advancement and defence of this imagination, is one of those things which sets me at liberty from being influenced by the authority of any sort of men in matters of religion. For what will not their confidence undertake to vent, and their sophistical ability give countenance unto, or wrangle about, which their interest requires and calls for at their hands ; who can openly plead and contend for the truth of such an absurd and irrational assertion, as is contrary to all that we know of God and his will, to all that we understand of ourselves or our duty, with respect thereunto.

When the New Testament was to be written, the church was to be diffused throughout the world, amongst people of all tongues and languages under heaven: yet there was a necessity that it should be written in some one certain language, wherein the sacred truth of it might, as in original records, be safely laid up and deposited. It was left, as *καλωραθηκεν, επει πραγματαθηκεν* a good and sacred depositum unto the ministry of the church to be kept inviolate, by the Holy Ghost, 1 Tim. vi. 20. 2 Tim. i. 14. And it was disposed into writing in one certain language, wherein the preservation of it in purity, was committed to the ministry of all ages; not absolutely, but under his care and inspection. From this one language God had ordained, that it should be derived by the care of the ministry unto the knowledge and use of all nations and people. And this was represented by the miraculous gift of tongues communicated by the Holy Ghost unto the first designed publishers of the gospel. In this case it pleased the wisdom of the Holy Ghost to make use of the Greek language, wherein he writ the whole New Testament originally. For the report that the Gospel of Matthew and the Epistle to the Hebrews were first written in Hebrew, is altogether groundless, and I have elsewhere disproved it.

Now this language, at that season, through all sorts of advantages was diffused throughout the world, espe-

cially in those parts of it where God had designed to fix the first and principal station of the church. For the eastern parts of the world, it was long before carried into them, and its use imposed on them by the Macedonian arms and laws, with the establishment of the Grecian empire for sundry ages among them. And some while before in the western parts of the world, the same language was greatly enquired into, and generally received, on the account of the wisdom and learning which was treasured up therein, in the writings of poets, philosophers, and historians, which had newly received a peculiar advancement.

For two things fell out in the providence of God about that season, which greatly conduced unto the furtherance of the gospel. The Jews were wholly possessed of whatever was true in religion, and which lay in a direct subserviency unto the gospel itself. This they gloried in and boasted of, as a privilege which they enjoyed above all the world. The Grecians on the other hand, were possessed of skill and wisdom in all arts and sciences, with the products of philosophical enquiries, and elegancy of speech in expressing the conceptions of their minds. And this they gloried in and boasted of above all other people in the world. Now both these nations being dispossessed of their empire, sovereignty, and liberty at home by the Romans, multitudes of them made it their business to disperse themselves in the world, and to seek as it were a new empire, the one to its religion, and the other to its language, arts and sciences. Of both sorts with their design, the Roman writers in those days do take notice, and greatly complain. And these privileges being boasted of, and rested in, proved equally prejudicial to both nations, as to the reception of the gospel, as our apostle disputes at large, 1 Cor. i. 2. But through the wisdom of God disposing and ordering all things unto his own glory, the design and actings of them both became an effectual means to facilitate the propagation of the gospel. For the Jews having planted synagogues in most nations and principal cities of the Roman

empire, they had both leavened multitudes of people with some knowledge of the true God, which prepared the way of the gospel; as also they had gathered fixed assemblies, which the preachers of the gospel constantly took the advantage of, to enter upon their work, and to begin the declaration of their message. The Grecians on the other hand, had so universally diffused the knowledge of their language, as the use of that one tongue alone was sufficient to instruct all sorts of people throughout the world in the knowledge of the truth. For the gift of tongues was only to be a sign unto unbelievers, 1 Cor xiv. and not a means of preaching the gospel constantly in a language which he understood not who spake.

In this language therefore as the most common, diffusive, and generally understood in the world, did God order that the books of the New Testament should be written. From thence by translations and expositions, was it to be derived into other tongues and languages. For the design of God was still the same, that his word should be declared unto the church, in a language which it understood. Hence is that peculiar distribution of the nations of the world, into Jews, Greeks, Barbarians and Scythians; not accommodated unto the use of those times in Grecian Writers, unto whom the Jews were no less barbarians than the Scythians themselves, Col. iii. 11. But as the Scriptures of the Old Testament were peculiarly given unto the Jews, so were those of the New unto the Greeks, that is, those who made use of their language, from whence it was deduced unto all other nations, called Barbarians and Scythians.

It must be acknowledged that the Scripture as written in these languages, is accompanied with many and great advantages. (1.) In them peculiarly is it γραφη δεοντευεσφ, a writing by divine inspiration, 2 Tim. iii. 16. And הָנָה סְפִרְתַּה יְהוָה the Book of writing of the Lord, Isa. xxxiv. 16. with a singular privilege above all translations. Hence the very words themselves as therein used and placed are sacred, consecrated by God unto that holy use. The sacred sense indeed of the words and expression is the

Internum formale sacrum, or that wherein the holiness of the Scripture doth consist. But the writing itself in the original languages, in the words chosen and used by the Holy Ghost, is the *externum formale*, of the holy Scripture, and is materially sacred.

It is the sense therefore of the Scripture which principally, and for its own sake we enquire after and into; that divine sense which as Justin Martyr speaks, is *υπερ ογον, υπερ γον, καὶ υπερ πασαν καταληψίαν*; absolutely above our natural reason, understanding and comprehension. In the words we are concerned with respect thereunto, as by the wisdom of the Holy Ghost they are designed as the written signs thereof.

(2.) The words of the Scripture being given thus immediately from God, every apex, tittle, or iota, in the whole, is considerable, as that which is an effect of divine wisdom, and therefore filled with sacred truth according to their place and measure. Hence they are all under the especial care of God, according to that promise of our Saviour, Matth. v. 18. Verily I say unto you, *εἰς αὐτὸν παρελθεῖ ὁ θάνατος καὶ οὐκ ιστάει η μία κεχαριτωμένη λαβεῖ τὸν θάνατον* “Till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall not pass from the law.” That our Saviour doth here intend the writing of the Scriptures then in use in the church, and assure the protection of God unto the least letter, vowel or point of it, I have proved elsewhere. And himself in due time will reprove the profane boldness of them, who without evidence or sufficient proof, without that respect and reverence which is due unto the interest, care, providence and faithfulness of God in this matter, do assert manifold changes to have been made in the original writings of the Scripture.

But as I said, divine senses, and singular mysteries may be couched in the use and disposal of a letter. And this God himself hath manifested, as in sundry other instances, so in the change of the names of Abram and Sarai, wherein the addition or alteration of one letter carried along with it a mysterious signification for the use of the church

in all ages. In translations nothing of that nature can be observed. And hence a due consideration of the very accents in the original of the Old Testament as distinctive or conjunctive is a singular advantage in the investigation of the sense of particular places and sentences.

(3dly.) There is in the originals of the Scripture a peculiar emphasis of words and expressions, and in them an especial energy to intimate and insinuate the sense of the Holy Ghost unto the minds of men, which cannot be traduced into other languages by translations, so as to obtain the same power and efficacy. Now this is not absolutely from the nature of the original languages themselves, especially not of the Greek, whose principal advantages and excellencies, in copiousness, and elegance are little used in the New Testament; but from a secret impression of divine wisdom, and efficacy accompanying the immediate delivery of the mind of God in them. There is therefore no small advantage hence to be obtained in the interpretation of the Scripture. For when we have received an impression on our minds of the sense and intention of the Holy Ghost in any particular place, we shall seek for meet words to express it by, wherein consists the whole work of Scripture exposition so far as I have any acquaintance with it. *Interpretis officium est, non quid ipse velit, sed quid sentiat ille quem interpretatur, exponere.* Hieron. Apol. Adv. Ruffin.

For when the mind is really affected with the discovery of truth itself, it will be guided and directed in the declaration of it unto others.

(4.) The whole course of speech, especially in the New Testament is accommodated unto the nature, use and propriety of that language, as expressed in other authors, who wrote therein, and had a perfect understanding of it. From them therefore is the proper use and sense of the words, phrases, and expressions in the New Testament much to be learned. This no man can make a judgment of in a due manner, but he that is skilled in that language as used and delivered by them: not that I think a commentary on the New Testament may be collected out of

Eustathius, Hesychius, Phavorinus, Julius Pollux and other glossaries, from whose grammaticisms and vocabularies some do countenance themselves in curious and bold conjectures; nor from the likeness of expressions in classic authors; this only I say, that it is of singular advantage in the interpretation of the Scripture, that a man be well acquainted with the original languages, and be able to examine the use and signification of words, phrases and expressions, as they are applied and declared in other authors. And even to the understanding of the Greek of the New Testament, it is necessary that a man have an acquaintance with the Hebrew of the Old. For although I do not judge that there are such a number of Hebraisms in it, in a supposed discovery whereof consists no small part of some men's critical observations; so I readily grant that there is such a cognition and alliance in and between the senses of the one and the other, as that a due comparing of their expressions, doth mutually contribute light and perspicuity unto them.

By these things great advantage may be obtained unto the right understanding of the sense of the Scripture, or the mind of the Holy Ghost therein. For there is no other sense in it than what is contained in the words, whereof materially it doth consist, though really that sense itself be such as our minds cannot receive without the especial divine assistance before pleaded. And in the interpretation of the mind of any one, it is necessary that the words he speaks or writes be rightly understood. And this we cannot do immediately unless we understand the language wherein he speaks, as also the idiotisms of that language, with the common use and intention of its phraseology and expressions. And if we do not hereby come unto a perfect comprehension of the sense intended, because many other things are required therunto, yet an hindrance is removed, without which we cannot do so, occasions of manifold mistakes are taken away, and the cabinet is as it were unlocked, wherein the jewel of truth lies hid, which with a lawful diligent search may be found.

And what perplexities, mistakes and errors the ignorance of these original languages hath cast many expositors into both of old and of late, especially among those who pertinaciously adhere unto one translation, and that none of the best, might be manifested by instances undeniable and that without number. Such as that of the gloss on Tit. iii. 10. *Hæreticum hominem de vita;* which adds as its exposition; *tolle.* And those among ourselves who are less skilled in this knowledge, are to be advised, that they would be careful not to adventure on any singular exposition of the Scriptures, or any text in them, upon the credit of any one or all translations they can make use of, seeing persons of greater name and worth than to be mentioned unto their disreputation, have miscarried upon the same account. A reverential subjection of mind, and diligent attendance unto the analogy of faith is their best preservative in this matter. And I fear not to add, that a superficial knowledge in these tongues, which many aim at, is of little use, unless it be to make men adventurous in betraying their own ignorance. But the sense and substance of the Scripture being contained entirely in every good translation, (amongst which that in use among ourselves is excellent, though capable of great improvements) men may by the use of the means before directed unto, and under the conduct of the teaching of the Spirit of God in them, usefully and rightly expound the Scripture in general, unto the edification of others, whereof many instances may be given amongst ancient and modern expositors.

This skill and knowledge therefore is of great use unto them who are called unto the interpretation of the Scripture. And the church of God hath had no small advantage by the endeavours of men learned herein, who have exercised it in the exposition of the words and phraseology of the Scriptures, as compared with their use in other authors. But yet, as was before observed, this skill and the exercise of it, in the way mentioned, is no other duty in itself, nor enjoined unto any for its own sake, but only hath a goodness in it with respect unto a certain end. Where-

fore it is in its own nature indifferent, and in its utmost improvement capable of abuse; and such in late days it hath fallen under unto a great extremity. For the study of the original languages, and the exercise of skill in them, in the interpretation of the Scripture, hath been of great reputation, and that deservedly. Hence multitudes of learned men have engaged themselves in that work and study, and the number of annotations and comments on the Scripture, consisting principally in critical observations as they are called, have been greatly increased. And they are utter strangers unto these things, who will not allow that many of them are of singular use. But withal, this skill and faculty where it hath been unaccompanied with that humility, sobriety, reverence of the author of the Scripture, and respect unto the analogy of faith, which ought to bear sway in the minds of all men who undertake to expound the oracles of God, may be, and hath been greatly abused unto the hurt of its owners, and disadvantage of the church.

For (1.) it hath been turned into the fuel of pride, and a noisome elation of mind. Yea experience shews that this kind of knowledge where it is supposed signal, is of all others the most apt to puff up and swell the vain minds of men, unless it be where it is allayed with a singular modesty of nature, or the mind itself be sufficiently corrected and changed by grace. Hence the expressions of pride and self-conceit which some have broken forth into on an imagination of their skill and faculty in criticising on the Scriptures, have been ridiculous and impious. The Holy Ghost usually teacheth not such persons, neither should I expect to learn much from them relating unto the truth as it is in Jesus. But yet the stones they dig may be made use of by a skilful builder.

(2.) In many it hath been accompanied with a noxious profane curiosity. Every tittle and apex shall give them occasion for fruitless conjectures, as vain for the most part as those of the cabalistical Jews. And this humour hath filled us with needless and futile observations, which, beyond an ostentation of the learning of their authors (indeed

the utmost end whereunto they are designed) are of no use nor consideration. But this is not all; some men, from hence have been prompted unto a boldness in adventuring to corrupt the text itself, or the plain sense of it. For what else is done when men for an ostentation of their skill, will produce quotations out of learned authors, to illustrate or expound sayings in the Scripture, wherein there seems to be some kind of compliance in words and sounds, when their senses are adverse and contrary? Amongst a thousand instances which might be given to exemplify this folly and confidence, we need take that one alone of him, who to explain or illustrate that saying of Hezekiah, "Good is the word of the Lord which thou hast spoken; he said moreover, for there shall be peace and truth in my days," Isa. xxxix. subjoins, εὐδαίμονα μηχανεῖται περὶ; So comparing that holy man's submission and satisfaction in the peace of the church with truth, and the blasphemous imprecation of an impious wretch for confusion on the world, when once he should be got out of it. And such notable sayings are many of our late critics farced withal.

And the confidence of some hath fallen into greater excesses, and hath swelled over these bounds also. To countenance their conjectures and self-pleasing imaginations, from whence they expect no small reputation for skill and learning, they fall in upon the text itself. As indeed we are come into an age wherein many seem to judge that they can neither sufficiently value themselves, nor obtain an estimation in the world, without some bold fallies of curiosity or novelty into the vitals of religion, with reflection of contempt and scorn on all that are otherwise minded, as persons incapable of comprehending their attainments. Hence it is that amongst ourselves we have scarce any thing left unattacked in the doctrine of the reformed churches, and of that in England as in former days; neither shall he be with many esteemed a man either of parts, learning, or judgment, who hath not some new curious opinions or speculation differing from what

hath been formerly commonly taught and received, although the universality of these renowned notions among us, are but corrupt emanations from Socinianism or Arminianism on the one hand, or from Popery on the other.

But it is men of another sort, and in truth of another manner of learning, than the present corrupters of the doctrines of the gospel, (who, so far as I can perceive trouble not themselves about the Scripture much one way or another) that we treat about. They are such as in the exercise of the skill and ability under consideration, do fall in upon the Scripture itself, to make way for the advancement of their own conjectures, whereof ten thousand are not of the least importance, compared with the duty and necessity of preserving the sacred text inviolate, and the just and due persuasion that so it hath been preserved. For first, they command the vowels and accents of the Hebrew text out of their way, as things wherein they are not concerned, when the use of them in any one page of the Scripture, is incomparably of more worth and use, than all that they are, or ever will be of, in the church of God: And this is done on slight conjectures. And if this suffice not to make way for their designs, then letters and words themselves must be corrected, upon an unproveable supposition, that the original text hath been changed or corrupted. And the boldness of some herein is grown intolerable, so that it is as likely means for the introduction and promotion of atheism, as any engine the devil hath set on work in these days wherein he is so openly engaged in that design.

There are also sundry other ways whereby this great help unto the understanding and interpretation of the Scripture, may be and hath been abused; those mentioned may suffice as instances confirming our observations. Wherefore as substantial knowledge and skill in the originals is useful, and indeed necessary unto him that is called unto the exposition of the Scripture, so in the use and exercise of it sundry things ought to be well considered by them who are furnished therewithal. As

(1.) That the thing itself is no grace, nor any peculiar gift of the Holy Ghost, but a mere fruit of diligence, upon a common furniture with natural abilities. And nothing of this nature is in sacred things to be rested on, or much trusted unto. (2.) That the exercise of this skill in and about the Scripture is not in itself as such an especial or immediate duty. Were it so, there would be especial grace promised to fill it up and quicken it. For all gospel duties are animated by grace in their due performance: that is, those who do so perform them have especial assistance in their so doing. But it is reduced unto the general head of duty with respect unto the end aimed at. Wherefore (3.) The blessing of God on our endeavours, succeeding and prospering of them, as in other natural and civil occasions of life, is all that we expect herein from the Holy Spirit. And (4.) Sundry other things are required of us, if we hope for this blessing on just grounds. It may be some ignorant persons are so fond as to imagine that if they could understand the original languages, they must of necessity understand the sense of the Scripture. And there is nothing more frequent than for some, who either truly or falsely pretend a skill in them, to bear themselves high against those who perhaps are really more acquainted with the mind of the Holy Ghost in the word than themselves, as though all things were plain and obvious unto them, others knowing nothing but by them, or such as they are. But this is but one means of many that is useful to this purpose, and that such, as if it be alone, is of little or no use at all. It is fervent prayer, humility, lowliness of mind, godly fear and reverence of the word, and subjection of conscience unto the authority of every title of it, a constant attendance unto the analogy of faith, with due dependence on the Spirit of God for supplies of light and grace, which must make this or any other means of the same nature effectual.

An acquaintance with the history and geography of the world, and with chronology, I reckon also among discipli-

narian aids in the interpretation of the Scripture. For as time is divided into what is past, and what is to come, so there are sundry things in the Scripture which in all seasons relate thereunto. For (first) God hath therein given us an account of the course and order of all things, (which the Jews call סדר תּהֵלָה) from the foundation of the world. And this he did for sundry important reasons, as incident with the general end of the Scripture. For hereby hath he secured the testimony that he hath given to his being, power and providence, by the creation and rule of all things. The evidences in them given thereunto, are those which are principally attacked by atheists. And although they do sufficiently manifest and evince their own testimony unto the common reason of mankind, yet sundry things relating unto them are so involved in darkness, and inextricable circumstances, as if all their concernments had not been plainly declared in the Scripture, the wisest of men had been at a great loss about them; and so were they always who wanted the light and advantage hereof. But here as he hath plainly declared the original emanation of all things from his eternal power, so hath he testified unto his constant rule over all in all times, places, ages and seasons, by instances incontrouable. Therein hath he treasured up all sorts of examples, with such impressions of his goodness, patience, power, wisdom, holiness and righteousness upon them, as proclaim his almighty and righteous government of the whole univerſe. And in the whole he hath delivered unto us such a tract and series of the ages of the world, from its beginning, as atheism hath no tolerable pretence, from tradition, testimony, or the evidence of things themselves, to break in upon. Whatever is objected against the beginning of all things, and the course of their continuance in the world delivered unto us in the Scripture, which is secured not only by the authority of divine revelation, but also by an universal evidence of all circumstances, is fond and ridiculous. I speak of the account given us in general, sufficient unto its own ends, and not of any men's deductions

and applications of it unto minute portions of time, which probably it was not designed unto. It is sufficient unto its end, that its account in general, which confounds all atheistical presumptions, is not to be impeached. And although the authority of the Scripture is not to be pleaded immediately against atheists, yet the matter and reason of it is, which from its own evidence renders all contrary pretensions contemptible.

2dly. God hath hereby given an account of the beginning, progres, trials, faith, obedience, and whole proceeding of the church in the pursuit of the first promise, unto the actual exhibition of Jesus Christ in the flesh. Hereto-unto were all things in a tendency for four thousand years. It is a glorious prospect we have therein, to see the call and foundation of the church in the first promise given unto our common parents; what additions of light and knowledge he granted unto it successively by new revelations and promises; how he gradually adorned it with gifts, privileges and ordinances; what ways and means he used to preserve it in faith, purity and obedience; how he chastened, tried, punished and delivered it; how he dealt with the nations of the world with respect unto it, raising them up for its affliction, and destroying them for their cruelty and oppression of it; what were the ways of wicked and sinful men amongst them, or in it, and what the graces and fruits of his saints, how by his power he retrieved it out of various calamities, and preserved it against all opposition unto its appointed season; all which with innumerable other effects of divine wisdom and grace, are blessedly represented unto us therein.

Now besides that spiritual wisdom and insight into the great design of God in Christ, which is required unto a right understanding in these things, as they were types of better things to come, and examples of gospel mysteries; there is a skill and understanding in the records and monuments of time, the geographical respect of one nation unto another, the periods and revolutions of seasons and ages required, to apprehend them aright in their first lite-

ral instance and intention. And besides what is thus historically related in the Scripture, there are prophecies also of things to come in the church, and amongst the nations of the world, which are great evidences of its own divinity, and supporting arguments of our faith. But without some good apprehension of the distinction of times, seasons and places, no man can rightly judge of their accomplishment.

Secondly, There are, in particular prophecies in the Old Testament, which reach unto the times of the gospel, upon the truth whereof the whole Scripture doth depend. Such are those concerning the calling of the Gentiles, the rejection and recovery of the Jews, the erection of the glorious kingdom of Christ in the world, with the oppositions that should be made unto it: and to these many are added in the New Testament itself, as Matth. xxiv. 25. 2 Thess ii. 1 Tim. iv. 1, 2, 3. 2 Tim. iii. 1, 2, 3. chap. iv. 3. But especially in the whole book of the Revelation, wherein the state of the church and of the world are foretold unto the consummation of all things. And how can any man arrive unto a tolerable acquaintance with the accomplishment of these prophecies as to what is already past, or have a distinct grounded expectation of the fulfilling of what remains foretold, without a prospect into the state of things in the world, the revolutions of times past with what fell out in them, which are the things spoken of? Those who treat of them without it, do but feign chimeras to themselves, as men in the dark are apt to do, or corrupt the word of God, by turning it into senseless and fulsome allegories. And those, on the other side, by whom these things are wholly neglected, do despise the wisdom and care of God towards the church, and disregard a blessed means of our faith and consolation.

Some things of this nature, especially such as relate unto chronological computations, I acknowledge are attended with great and apparently inextricable difficulties. But the skill and knowledge mentioned will guide humble and modest enquirers into so sufficient a satisfaction in general, and as unto all things which are really useful, that they

shall have no temptation to question the verity of what in particular they cannot assyole. And it is an intolerable pride and folly where we are guided and satisfied infallibly in a theusand things, which we know no otherwise, to question the authority of the whole, because we cannot comprehend one or two particulars which perhaps were never intended to be reduced unto our measure. Besides, as the investigation of these things is attended with difficulties, so the ignorance of them, or mistakes about them, whilst the minds of men are free from pertinacy and a spirit of contention, are of no great advantage. For they have very little influence on our faith and obedience, any otherwise than that we call not into question what is revealed. And it is most probable that the Scripture never intended to give us such minute chronological determinations, as some would deduce their computations unto, and that because not necessary. Hence we see that some who have laboured therein unto a prodigy of industry and learning, although they have made some useful discoveries, yet have never been able to give such evidence unto their computations, as that others would acquiesce in them; but by all their endeavours have administered occasion of new strife and contention, about things it may be of no great importance to be known or determined. And in general men have run into two extremes in these things; for some pretend to frame an exact computation and consent of times from the Scripture alone, without any regard unto the records, monuments, histories, and signatures of times in the world. Wherever these appear in opposition or contradiction unto the chain and links of time which they have framed to themselves (as they suppose from the Scripture) they reject them as matters of no consideration. And it were well if they could do this unto satisfaction. But how evidently they have failed herein, as for instance in the computation of Daniel's weeks wherein they will allow but 490 years from the first of Cyrus unto the death of our Saviour, contrary to the common consent of mankind about things that fell out, and their continuance, be-

tween those seasons, taking up 562 years, is manifest unto all. The Scripture indeed is to be made the only sacred standard and measure of things in its proper sense and understanding; nor is any thing to be esteemed of, which riseth up in contradiction thereunto. But as a due consideration of foreign testimonies and monuments doth oft times give great light unto what is more generally or obscurely expressed in the Scripture; so where the Scripture in these things, with such allowances as it every where declares itself to admit of, may be interpreted in a fair compliance with uncontrouled foreign testimonies, that interpretation is to be embraced. The question is not therefore, whether we shall regulate the computation of times by the Scripture, or histories and marks of time in the world; but whether, when the sense of the Scripture is obscure in those things, and its determination only general, so as to be equally capable of various senses, that (all other things being alike) is not to be preferred which agrees with the undoubted monuments of times in the nations of the world. For instance, the angel Gabriel acquaints Daniel that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and build Jerusalem, unto Messiah the Prince, and his cutting off, should be seventy weeks, (to speak only of the whole number in general) that is, 490 years; now there were sundry commandments given, or decrees made by the kings of Persia, who are intended, to this purpose; of these two were the most famous, the one granted by Cyrus in the first year of his empire, Ezra i. 1. The other by Artaxerxes in the 7th year of his reign, Ezra vii. 12, 13, 14. Between the first of these and the death of Christ, there must be allowed 562 years, unless you will offer violence unto all monuments, records, and circumstances of times in the world. It is therefore safer to interpret the general words of the angel of the latter decree or commandment, whose circumstances also make it more probable to be intended, wherein the spaces of time mentioned falls in exactly with other approved histories and records. Neither would I disallow another computation,

which contending for the first decree of Cyrus to be the beginning of the time mentioned, and allowing the whole space from thence to be really 562 years, affirms that the Scripture excludes the consideration of the years supernumerary to the 490, because of the interruptions which at several seasons were put upon the people, in the accomplishment of the things foretold for so many years, which some suppose to be signified by the distribution of the whole number of 70 weeks, into seven, sixty-two and one, each of which fractions hath its proper work belonging unto it. For this computation offers no violence either to sacred, or unquestionable human authority.

But on the other extreme, some there are who obse rving the difficulties in these accounts, as expressed in the Scripture from the beginning; having framed another series of things to themselves, openly divers from that exhibited therein, and raked together from other authors, some things giving countenance unto their conjectures, do profanely make bold to break in upon the original text, accusing it of imperfection or corruption, which they will rectify by their fine inventions, and the aid of a translation, known to be mistaken in a thousand places, and in some justly suspected of wilful depravations. But this presumptuous confidence is nothing but an emanation from that flood of atheism which is breaking in on the world in these declining ages of it.

The third aid or assistance of this kind is a skill in the ways and methods of reasoning, which are supposed to be common unto the Scriptures with other writings. And this, as it is an art or an artificial faculty, like those other means before mentioned, is capable of a right improvement, or of being abused. An ability to judge of the sense of propositions, how one thing depends on another, how it is deduced from it, follows upon it, or is proved by it, what is the design of him that writes or speaks in any discourse or reasonings, how it is propos'd, confirmed, illustrated, is necessary unto any rational consideration to be exercised about whatever is so proposed unto us. And

when the minds of men are confirmed in a good habit of judgment by the rules of the art of reasoning, about the ordinary ways and methods of it, it is of great advantage in the investigation of the sense of any writer even of the Scripture itself. And those ordinarily who shall undertake the interpretation of any series of Scripture discourse, without some ability in this science, will find themselves often-times entangled and at a loss, where by virtue of it they might be at liberty and free. And many of the rules which are commonly given about the interpretation of the Scripture, as namely, that the scope of the author in the place is duly to be considered, as also things antecedent and consequent to the place and words to be interpreted, and the like, are but directions for the due use of this skill or faculty.

But this also must be admitted with its limitations. For whatever perfection there seems to be in our art of reasoning, it is to be subjected to the wisdom of the Holy Ghost in the Scripture. His way of reasoning is always his own, sometimes sublime and heavenly, so as not to be reduced unto the common rules of our arts and sciences, without a derogation from its instructive, convictive, and persuasive efficacy. For us to frame unto ourselves rules of ratiocination, or to have our minds embondaged unto those of other men's invention and observation, if we think thereon absolutely to reduce all the reasonings in the Scripture unto them, we may fall into a presumptuous mistake. In the consideration of all effects of infinite wisdom there must be an allowance for the deficiency of our comprehension, when humble subjection of conscience, and the captivating of our understandings to the obedience of faith, is the best means of learning what is proposed unto us. And there is nothing more contemptible than the arrogancy of such persons, who think by the shallow measures and short lines of their own weak, dark, imperfect reasonings, to fathom the depths of Scripture senses.

Again; What sense soever any man supposeth or judgeth this or that particular place of Scripture, to yield and give out to the best of his rational intelligence, is immediately

to give place unto the analogy of faith, that is the Scriptures own declaration of its sense in other places, to another purpose, or contrary thereunto. The want of attending unto men's duty herein, with a mixture of pride and pertinacy, is the occasion of most errors and noxious opinions in the world. For when some have taken up a private interpretation of any place of Scripture, if before they have throughly imbibed and vented it, they do not submit their conceptions, although they seem to be greatly satisfied in it and full of it, unto the authority of the Scripture in the declaration of its own mind in other places, there is but small hope of their recovery. And this is that pride which is the source and original of heresy; namely, when men will prefer their seemingly wise and rational conceptions of the sense of particular places, before the analogy of faith.

Moreover there is a pernicious mistake that some are fallen into about these things. They suppose that taking in the help of skill in the original languages for the understanding of the words and their use, whether proper or figurative, that there is nothing more necessary to the understanding and interpretation of the Scripture, but only the sedulous and diligent use of our own reason, in the ordinary way, and according to the common rules of the art of ratiocination. For what, say they, can be more required, or what can men more make use of? By these means alone do we come to understand the meaning of any other writer, and therefore also of the Scripture. Neither can we, nor doth God require, that we should receive or believe any thing but according to our own reason and understandings. But these things, though in themselves they are, some of them, partly true, yet as they are used unto the end mentioned, they are perniciously false. For (1.) It greatly unbecometh any Christian once to suppose that there is need of no other assistance, nor the use of any other means for the interpretation of the oracles of God, or to come unto the understanding of the hidden wisdom of God in the mystery of the gospel, than is to the

understanding, or interpretation of the writings of men, which are the product of a finite, limited and weak ability. Were it not for some secret persuasion that the Scripture indeed is not what it pretends to be, the word of the living God, or that it doth not indeed express the highest effect of his wisdom, and deepest counsel of his will, it could not be that men should give way to such foolish imaginations. The principal matter of the Scripture is mysterious, and the mysteries of it are laid up therein by God himself, and that in a way inimitable by the skill or wisdom of men. When we speak of, and express the same things according unto our measure of comprehension, wherein from its agreement with the Scripture, what we say is materially divine, yet our words are not so, nor is there the same respect to the things themselves, as the expressions of the Scripture have, which are formally divine. And can we ourselves trac these paths of wisdom without his especial guidance and assistance? It is highly atheistical once to fancy it. (2.) We treat of such an interpretation of the Scripture as is real, and is accompanied with an understanding of the things proposed and expressed; and not merely of the notional sense of propositions and expressions. For we speak of such an interpretation of the Scripture as is a sanctified means of our illumination; nor any other doth either the Scripture require, or God regard. That to give in this unto us, notwithstanding the use and advantage of all outward helps and means, is the peculiar work of the Spirit of God, hath been before demonstrated. It is true, we can receive nothing, reject nothing as to what is true or false, nor conceive the sense of any thing but by our own reasons and understandings. But the enquiry herein is, what supernatural aid and assistance our minds and natural reasons stand in need of, to enable them to receive and understand aright things spiritual and supernatural. And if it be true, that no more is required unto the due understanding and interpretation of the Scriptures, but the exercise of our own reasons, in and by the helps mentioned, namely, skill in the original languages, the arts of ratiocin-

nation, and the like, which are exposed unto all in common, according to the measure of their natural abilities and diligence, then is the sense of the Scripture, that is, the mind of God and Christ therein, equally discernible, er to be attained unto by all sorts of men, good and bad, holy and profane, believers and unbelievers, those who obey the word, and those who despise it; which is contrary to all the promises of God, and innumerable other testimonies of Scripture.

CHAP. IX.

Helps Ecclesiastical in the Interpretation of the Scripture.

THIRDLY, There are means and helps for the interpretation of the Scripture, which I call ecclesiastical. Those I intend which we are supplied withal by the ministry of the church, in all ages. And they may be referred unto three heads, under which their usefulness to this purpose is pleaded. As (1.) Catholic or universal tradition. (2.) Consent of the fathers. (3.) The endeavours of any persons holy and learned, who have gone before us in the investigation of the truth, and exprest their minds in writing, for the edification of others, whether of old or of late. These things belong unto the ministry of the church, and so far as they do so are sanctified ordinances for the communication of the mind of God unto us,

(1.) It is pleaded by some that the Scripture is to be interpreted according to catholic tradition and no otherwise. And I do acknowledge that we should be inexpressibly obliged to them who would give us an interpretation of the whole Scripture, or of any book in the Scripture, or of any one passage in the Scripture, relating unto things of mere sapernatural revelation, according unto that rule, or by the guidance and direction of it. But I fear no such

tradition can be evidenced, unless it be of things manifest in the light of nature, whose universal preservation is an effect of the unavoidable reason of mankind, and not of any ecclesiastical tradition. Moreover the Scripture itself is testified unto unanimously and uninterruptedly by all Christians to be the word of God; and hereby are all divine truths conveyed down from their original, and delivered unto us. But a collateral tradition of any one truth or doctrine besides, from Christ and the apostles cannot be proved. And if it could be so, it would be no means of the interpretation of the Scripture, but only objectively, as one place of Scripture interprets another; that is, it would belong unto the analogy of faith, contrary to which, or in opposition whereunto, no place ought to be interpreted. To pretend this therefore to be the rule of the interpretation of Scripture actively, as though thereby we could certainly learn the meaning of it in part or in whole, is fond. Nor, whatever some do boast of, can any man living prove his interpretation of any one place, to be dictated by, or to be suitable unto universal tradition, any otherwise but as he can prove it to be agreeable to the Scripture itself; unless we shall acknowledge without proof, that what is the mind and sense of some men who call themselves the church at present, was the mind of Christ and his apostles, and of all true believers since, and that infallibly it is so. But this pretence hath been abundantly and sufficiently disproved, though nothing seems to be so, to the minds of men fortified against all evidences of truth by invincible prejudices.

2. The joint consent of the fathers or ancient doctors of the church is also pretended as a rule of Scripture interpretation. But those who make this plea are apparently influenced by their supposed interest so to do. No man of ingenuity, who hath ever read or considered them, or any of them, with attention and judgment can abide by this pretence. For it is utterly impossible they should be an authentic rule unto others, who so disagree among themselves, as they will be found to do, not it may be

so much in articles of faith, as in their exposition of Scripture, which is the matter under consideration. About the former they express themselves diversly, in the latter they really differ, and that frequently. Those who seem most earnestly to press this dogma upon us, are those of the church of Rome. And yet it is hard to find one learned man among them, who hath undertaken to expound or write commentaries on the Scripture, but on all occasions he gives us the different fenses, expositions and interpretations of the fathers, of the same places and texts; and that where any difficulty occurs in a manner perpetually. But the pretence of the authoritative determination of the fathers in points of religion, hath been so disproved, and the vanity of it so fully discovered, as that it is altogether needless farther to insist upon it. And those who would seem to have found out a middle way, between their determining authority on the one hand, and the efficacy of their reasons, with a due veneration of their piety and ability, which all sober men allow, on the other, do but trifle and speak words, whose sense neither themselves nor any other do understand.

3. We say therefore that the sole use of ecclesiastical means in the interpretation of the Scripture, is in the due consideration and improvement of that light, knowledge, understanding in, and those gifts for the declaration of the mind of God in the Scripture, which he hath granted unto, and furnished them withal, who have gone before us in the ministry and work of the gospel. For as God in an especial manner in all ages took care that the doctrine of the gospel should be preached *viva voce*, to the present edification of the body of the church; so likewise almost from the beginning of its propagation in the world, presently after the decease of the apostles, and that whole divinely inspired society of preachers and writers, he stirred up and enabled sundry persons to declare by writing what their apprehensions were, and what understanding God had given them in and about the sense of the Scripture. Of those who designedly wrote comments and expositions

on any part of the Scripture Origen was the first, whose fooleries and mistakes occasioned by the prepossession of his mind with platonical philosophy, confidence of his own great abilities, (which indeed were singular and admirable) with the curiosity of a speculative mind, discouraged not others from endeavouring with more sobriety and better success, to write entire expositions on some parts of the Scripture; such among the Greeks were Chrysostom, Theodore, Aretine, Oecumenius, Theophylact; and among the Latins Hierom, Ambrose, Austin, and others. These have been followed, used, improved, by others innumerable in succeeding ages. Especially since the reformation hath the work been carried on with general success, and to the great advantage of the church. Yet hath it not proceeded so far, but that the best, most useful and profitable labour in the Lord's vineyard, which any holy and learned man can engage himself in, is to endeavour the contribution of farther light in the opening and exposition of Scripture, or any part thereof. Now all these are singular helps and advantages unto the right understanding of the Scripture, of the same kind of advantage, as to that single end of light and knowledge, which preaching of the word is, used with sobriety, judgment, and a due examination of all by the text itself. For the exposition of the fathers, as it is a ridiculous imagination, and that which would oblige us to the belief of contradictions, and open mistakes, for any man to authenticate them so far as to bind us up unto an assent unto their conceptions and dictates because they are theirs; so they will not be despised by any, but such as have not been convertant in them. And it is easy to discern from them all, by the diversity of their gifts, ways and designs, in the exposition of Scripture, that the Holy Spirit divided unto them as he pleased; which as it should make us reverence his presence with them, and assistance of them, so it calls for the freedom of our own judgments to be exercised about their conceptions. And for those of latter days, though the names of the principal and most eminent of them, as Bucer, Calvin,

Martyr, Beza, are now contemned and despised by many, mostly by those who never once seriously attempted the exposition of any one chapter in the whole Scripture; yet those who firmly design to grow in the knowledge of God, and of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, both do, and always will bless God for the assistance he gave them in their great and holy works, and in the benefit which they receive by their labours. These are the outward means and advantages which are requisite and to be used, as any one's calling, opportunity, ability, and work, do require, as helps to attain a right understanding of the mind of God in the Scripture. Now concerning them all I shall only say, that the Spirit of God makes them useful and prosperous according to the counsel of his own will. Some are prone in the use of them, to lean unto their own understandings, and consequently to wander in and after the imaginations of their own minds, corrupting the word of God, and endeavouring to pervert his right ways thereby. Others he leaves in the shell of the text to exercise their skill about words, phrases, and expressions, without leading of them into the spiritual sense of the word, which is its life and power. In some he blesseth them to the full and proper end, but not unless they are in a compliance with the spiritual means and duties before insisted on.

From what hath been discoursed concerning the work of the Spirit of God in revealing unto believers the mind of God in the Sciptures, or the sense of that revelation made of it therein, two things will seem to follow. First, that those who have not that assistance granted to them, or that work of his wrought in them, cannot understand or apprehend the truth or doctrine of faith and obedience therein revealed. For if that work of the Spirit be necessary thereunto, which they are not made partakers of, how can they come to any knowledge or understanding therein? Secondly, that those who are so influenced and guided, must understand the whole Scripture aright, and be freed from all mistakes in their conceptions about the mind of God; both which are contrary to the experience of all men

in all ages; seeing many persons visibly destitute of any saving work of the Holy Ghost upon their minds, as is evident, in that no renovation of them, or reformation of life doth ensue thereon, have yet attained a great acquaintance with the truth as it is revealed in the word; and many who are truly enlightened and sanctified by him, do yet fall into sundry errors and mistakes, which the differences and divisions among themselves do openly proclaim. And the Scripture itself supposeth that there may be diversity of judgments about spiritual things, among those who are really sanctified and believers.

A brief answer unto both these exceptions will lead this discourse unto its close. I say therefore to the first; (1.) That there are in the declaration of the mind of God in the Scriptures sundry things that are common unto other writings, both as to the matter of them, and the manner of their delivery. Such are the stories of times past therein recorded, the computation of lives, the use of words, phrases of speech, figurative and proper, artificial connections of discourse, various sorts of arguments, and the like, all which persons may come to the understanding of, and be able to make a right judgment concerning, without any especial assistance of the Holy Spirit, the things about which they are conversant being the proper object of the reasonable faculties of the mind, provided there be a common blessing on their endeavours and exercise. (2.) The main doctrines of truth declared in the Scripture are proposed in such distinct, plain enunciations, in propositions accommodated unto the understandings of rational men, that persons who in the use of disciplinary and ecclesiastical helps, attend unto the study of them without prejudices, or prepossession with false notions and opinions, with freedom from the bias of carnal or secular interests and advantages, and the leaven of tradition, may learn, know and understand the sense, meaning and truth of the doctrines so proposed and declared unto them, without any especial work of saving illumination on their minds. The propositions of truth in the Scripture, I mean those which are necessary

ry unto the great ends of the Scripture, are so plain and evident in themselves, that it is the fault and sin of all men endued with rational abilities, if they perceive them not, and assent not unto them upon the evidence of their truth, or of the mind of God in those places of Scripture wherein they are declared; which is the substance of what we plead concerning the perspicuity of the Scripture against the Papists. (3.) Considering the natural vanity of the mind of man, its proneness to error and false imaginations, the weakness of judgment wherewith it is in all things accompanied, whatever it attains in the knowledge of truth, is to be ascribed unto the guidance of the Spirit of God, although not working in it or upon it by a communication of saving light and grace. For (4.) The knowledge of truth, thus to be attained is not that illumination which we are enquiring after, nor doth it produce those effects of renewing the mind, and transforming it into the image of the things known, with the fruits of holy obedience, which are inseparable from saving illumination.

In answer unto the second pretended consequence of what we have discoursed, I say (1.) That the promise of the Spirit, and the communication of him accordingly, to teach, instruct, guide and lead us into truth, is suited unto that great end for which God hath made the revelation of himself in his word; namely, that we might live unto him here according to his will, and be brought unto the enjoyment of him hereafter unto his glory. (2.) That unto this end it is not necessary that we should understand the direct sense and meaning of any single text, place or passage in the Scripture, nor yet that we should obtain the knowledge of every thing revealed therein. It sufficeth in answer to the promise and design of the work of the Holy Ghost, that the knowledge of all truth necessary to be known unto that end, be communicated us; and that we have so far a right understanding of the sense of the Scripture, as to learn that truth by the use of the means appointed unto that end. (3.) We are not hereby absolutely secured from particular errors and mistakes, no more than we are

from all actual sins, by the work of the Spirit on our wills; that of both kinds, whilst we live in this world, being only in a tendency towards perfection. There is no faculty of our souls that is absolutely and perfectly renewed in this life. But as the wills of believers are so far renewed and changed by grace as to preserve them from such sins, as are inconsistent with an holy life according to the tenor of the covenant, which yet leaves a possibility of many infirmities and actual sins; so their minds are so far renewed as to know and assent to all truths necessary to our life of obedience, and a right understanding of the Scripture wherein they are revealed, which yet may be consistent with many mistakes, errors, and false apprehensions unto our great damage and disadvantage. But withal this must be added, that such are the teachings of the Spirit of God, as to all divine truths whatever, both in the objective revelation of them in the word, and in the assistance he gives us by his light and grace to perceive and understand the mind and whole counsel of God in that revelation, that it is not without our own guilt, as well as from our own weakness, that we fall into errors and misapprehensions about any Scripture proposals that concern our duty to God. And if all that believe, would freely forego all prejudices or pre-conceived opinions, and cast off all impressions from worldly considerations and secular advantages, giving themselves up humbly and entirely to the teachings of God in the ways of his own appointment, some whereof have been before insisted on, we might all come “in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ,” Eph. iv. 13. And these things may suffice to illustrate the work of the Holy Ghost in our illumination with respect unto the external objective causes thereof, or the holy Scripture itself.

There is yet another work of the Holy Ghost with respect unto the Scripture, which although it fall not directly under the present consideration of the ways and means of saving illumination, yet the whole of what we have dis-

coursed is so resolved into it in the order of an external cause, as that it may justly claim a remembrance in this place; and this is, his watchful care over the written word, in preserving it from destruction and corruption, from the first writing of it unto this very day. That it hath been under the especial care of God, not only the event of its entire preservation, considering the opposition it hath been exposed unto, but also the testimony of our Saviour, as to the books of the Old Testament, than which those of the New are certainly of no less esteem or use, do sufficiently evince, Matth. v. 18. "Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or tittle shall in no ways pass from the law." That by the law the whole writings of the Old Testament are intended, the context doth declare. And what he affirms that it shall not by any means pass away, that is, be abolished or corrupted that he taketh on himself to preserve and secure. Two things the Scripture in itself is subject unto; (1). Destruction or abolition, as unto the whole or any necessary part thereof. (2.) Corruption of the writing by changes, alterations and falsifications of the copies of it. And by both of these it hath been attempted, and that both before and since the time of the promulgation of the gospel; the stories whereof are known. And yet is it come safe off from from all, not only without ruin, but without wound or blemish. For any one to suppose that this hath been done by chance, or by the care of men alone, without the especial watchful providence, and powerful actings of the Spirit of God, in the pursuit of the promise of Christ that it should not fail, which expressed a care that God had taken on himself to make good from the beginning, is not only to neglect the consideration of the nature of all human affairs, with the revolutions that they are subject unto, and the deceit and violence wherewith the Scriptures have been attacked, with the insufficiency of the powers and diligence employed for their preservation; but also to countenance atheistical notions, that God hath no especial regard to his word and

worship in the world. Indeed for a man to think and profess that the Scripture is the word of God, given unto men for the ends which itself declares, and of that use which it must be of in being so, and not believe that God hath always taken, and doth take especial care of its preservation, and that in its purity and integrity, beyond the ordinary ways of his providence in the rule of all other things, is to be sottish and foolish, and to entertain thoughts of God, his goodness, wisdom and power, infinitely unworthy of him and them. There have of late been some opinions concerning the integrity and purity of the Scriptures, invented and maintained, that I conceive take off from the reverence of that relation which the Scripture hath, in its integrity and purity, unto the care and glory of God. Hence it is by some maintained that some books written by divine inspiration, and given out unto the church as part of its canon or rule of faith and obedience, are utterly lost and perished. That the law and Scripture of the Old Testament before the captivity, were written though in the Hebrew tongue, (which they say was not originally the language of Abraham derived from Heber, but of the posterity of Cham in Canaan) yet not in the letters or characters which are now in use, but in those which a few wicked idolators called Samaritans did use and possess, being left unto them by Ezra, and new characters invented by him, or borrowed from the Chaldeans for the use of the church. That the vowels and accents, whereby alone the true reading and sense of it is preserved, are a late invention of some masorethical Rabbins; and that the original text is in many places corrupted, so as that it may and ought to be corrected, by translations, especially that of the LXX. with sundry other such imaginations, which they countenance with uncertain conjectures, and fabulous stories. And I cannot but wonder how some seem to take shelter unto their opinions, especially that of preferring the translation of the LXX. unto the original Hebrew text; or as they fondly speak, the present copy of it, in the church of England, whose publicly authorised and excel-

lent translation, takes no more notice, nor hath any more regard unto that translation, when it differs from the Hebrew, as it doth in a thousand places, than if it had never been in the world. And as no translations are in common use in the whole world, but what were immediately traduced out of the Hebrew original, excepting only some parts of the vulgar Latin; so I verily believe, that those very Christians who contend for a preference to be given unto that of the LXX. now they have got their ends, or at least attempted them in procuring a reputation of learning, skill and cunning by their writings about it, would not dare to advise a translation out of that to be made and composed for the use of that church which they adhere unto, be it what it will; to the rejection and exclusion of that taken out of the original. And to have two recommended unto common use, so discrepant as they would be found to be, would certainly be of more disadvantage to the church, than by all their endeavours otherwise they can compensate. Yea I am apt to think, that they will not be very urgent for an alteration to be made in the church's translation in those particular instances wherein they hope they have won themselves much reputation, in proving the mistakes of the Hebrew, and manifesting how it may be rectified by the translation of the LXX. For whatever thoughts may be in their minds concerning their learned disputes, I doubt not but they have more reverence of God and his word, than to break in upon it with such a kind of violence, on any pretence whatsoever. As therefore the integrity and purity of the Scripture in the original languages may be proved and defended against all opposition, with whatever belongs thereunto, so we must ascribe their preservation to the watchful care, and powerful operation of the Spirit of God absolutely securing them throughout all generations.

FINIS.

C O N T E N T S.

REASON OF FAITH, &c.

PREFACE.	5
CHAP. I. The Subject stated.—Preliminary Remarks.	9
— II. What it is infallibly to believe the Scripture as the Word of God, affirmed.	21
— III. Sundry convincing external arguments for Divine Revelation.	28
— IV. Moral certainty, the result of external arguments, ineffectual.	66
— V. Divine Revelation itself the only foundation and reason of faith.	97
— VI. The Nature of Divine Revelations. Their self-evidencing power considered: particularly that of the Scriptures as the Word of God.	114
— VII. References from the whole.—Some objections answered.	139
APPENDIX.	151

CAUSES, WAYS AND MEANS, &c.

PREFACE.	163
CHAP. I. Usurpation of the church of Rome, with reference unto the interpretation of the Scripture, or right understanding of the mind of God therin. Right and ability of all believers as to their own duty herein asserted. Importance of the truth proposed. The main question stated. The principal efficient cause of the understanding which believers have in the mind and will of God as revealed in the Scriptures, the Spirit of God himself. General assertions to be proved. Declared in sundry particulars Inferences from them.	167
— II. The general assertion confirmed with testimonies of the Scripture. Psalm cxix. verse 18. opened at large. Objections answered, 2 Cor. iii. 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. Explained. Isa. xxv. Luke i. 24, 25. Opened, Eph i. 17, 18, 19. Explained and pleaded, in confirmation of the truth, Hos. xiv. 9.	176
— III. Other testimonies pleaded in the confirmation of the same truth, John xvi. 13. opened. How far all true believers	

are infallibly led into all truth, declared. And the manner how they are so. 1 John ii. 20, 27. explained. What assurance of the truth they have who are taught of God. Eph. i. 5, 6. John xxx. 22. John vi. 45. Practical truths inferred from the assertion proved. -	196
CHAP. IV. The especial work of the Holy Spirit in the illumination of our minds unto the understanding of the Scripture, declared and vindicated Objections proposed and answered. The nature of the work asserted, Psal. cxix 18. Ephes. i. 18. 1 Pet. ii. 9. Col. i. 13. Luke xxiv. 25. John v. 20. opened and vindicated. - - -	222
V. Causes of the ignorance of the mind of God revealed in the Scripture; and of errors about it; what they are; and how they are removed. - - - -	239
VI. The work of the Holy Spirit in the composing and disposal of the Scripture as a means of sacred illumination; the perspicuity of the Scripture unto the understanding of the mind of God declared and vindicated -	258
VII. Means to be used for the right understanding of the mind of God in the Scripture. Those which are prescribed in a way of duty. - - - -	274
VIII. The second sort of means for the interpretation of the Scripture, which are disciplinarian. - - -	288
IX. Helps Ecclesiastical in the Interpretation of the Scripture. 310	

E R R A T A.

In Page 177, Line 19, for meditate, read *meditatemus*.

186,	9,	is, read <i>was</i> .
195.	12,	I, read <i>It</i> .
233,	25,	they do, read <i>do they</i> .
274,	1,	co-herence, read <i>coherence</i> .
293,	15,	title, read <i>tittle</i> .
293,	22,	title, read <i>tittle</i> .
300,	32,	title, read <i>tittle</i> .
304,	11,	advantage, read <i>disadvantage</i> .
318,	25,	from from, read <i>from</i> ,

(Excuse lesser errors.)

wh.

Joh

۷۰

DATE DUE



